

AMERICA'S FAILURE TO PERCEIVE THE PKK

Adnan Oktar (Harun Yahya)

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Now writing under the pen-name of HARUN YAHYA, Adnan Oktar was born in Ankara in 1956. Having completed his primary and secondary education in Ankara, he studied fine arts at Istanbul's Mimar Sinan University and philosophy at Istanbul University. Since the 1980s, he has published many books on political, scientific, and faith-related issues. Harun Yahya is well-known as the author of important works disclosing the imposture of evolutionists, their invalid claims, and the dark liaisons between Darwinism and such bloody ideologies as fascism and communism.

Harun Yahya's works, translated into 76 different languages, constitute a collection for a total of more than 55,000 pages with 40,000 illustrations.

His pen-name is a composite of the names Harun (Aaron) and Yahya (John), in memory of the two esteemed Prophets who fought against their peoples' lack of faith. The Prophet's seal on his books' covers is symbolic and is linked to their contents. It represents the Qur'an (the Final Scripture) and the Prophet Muhammad (pbuh), last of the prophets. Under the guidance of the Qur'an and the Sunnah (teachings of the Prophet [pbuh]), the author makes it his purpose to disprove each fundamental tenet of irreligious ideologies and to have the "last word," so as to completely silence the objections raised against religion. He uses the seal of the final Prophet (pbuh), who attained ultimate wisdom and moral perfection, as a sign of his intention to offer the last word.

All of Harun Yahya's works share one single goal: to convey the Qur'an's message, encourage readers to consider basic faith-related issues such as God's existence and unity and the Hereafter; and to expose irreligious systems' feeble foundations and perverted ideologies.

Harun Yahya enjoys a wide readership in many countries, from India to America, England to Indonesia, Poland to Bosnia, Spain to Brazil, Malaysia to Italy, France to Bulgaria and Russia. Some of his books are available in English, French, German, Spanish, Italian, Portuguese, Urdu, Arabic, Albanian, Chinese, Swahili, Hausa, Dhivehi (spoken in Maldives), Russian, Serbo-Croat (Bosnian), Polish, Malay, Uygur Turkish, Indonesian, Bengali, Danish and Swedish.

Greatly appreciated all around the world, these works have been instrumental in many people recovering faith in God and gaining deeper insights into their faith. His books' wisdom and sincerity, together with a distinct style that's easy to understand, directly affect anyone who reads them. Those who seriously consider these books, can no longer advocate atheism or any other perverted ideology or materialistic philosophy, since these books are characterized by rapid effectiveness, definite results, and irrefutability. Even if they continue to do so, it will be only a sentimental insistence, since these books refute such ideologies from their very foundations. All contemporary movements of denial are now ideologically defeated, thanks to the books written by Harun Yahya.

This is no doubt a result of the Qur'an's wisdom and lucidity. The author modestly intends to serve as a means in humanity's search for God's right path. No material gain is sought in the publication of these works.

Those who encourage others to read these books, to open their minds and hearts and guide them to become more devoted servants of God, render an invaluable service.

Meanwhile, it would only be a waste of time and energy to propagate other books that create confusion in people's minds, lead them into ideological confusion, and that clearly have no strong and precise effects in removing the doubts in people's hearts, as also verified from previous experience. It is impossible for books devised to emphasize the author's literary power rather than the noble goal of saving people from loss of faith, to have such a great effect. Those who doubt this can readily see that the sole aim of Harun Yahya's books is to overcome disbelief and to disseminate the Qur'an's moral values. The success and impact of this service are manifested in the readers' conviction.

One point should be kept in mind: The main reason for the continuing cruelty, conflict, and other ordeals endured by the vast majority of people is the ideological prevalence of disbelief. This can be ended only with the ideological defeat of disbelief and by conveying the wonders of creation and Qur'anic morality so that people can live by it. Considering the state of the world today, leading into a downward spiral of violence, corruption and conflict, clearly this service must be provided speedily and effectively, or it may be too late.

In this effort, the books of Harun Yahya assume a leading role. By the will of God, these books will be a means through which people in the twenty-first century will attain the peace, justice, and happiness promised in the Qur'an.

TO THE READER

□ A special chapter is assigned to the collapse of the theory of evolution because this theory constitutes the basis of all anti-spiritual philosophies. Since Darwinism rejects the fact of creation—and therefore, God's existence—over the last 150 years it has caused many people to abandon their faith or fall into doubt. It is therefore an imperative service, a very important duty to show everyone that this theory is a deception. Since some readers may find the opportunity to read only one of our books, we think it appropriate to devote a chapter to summarize this subject.

□ All the author's books explain faith-related issues in light of Qur'anic verses, and invite readers to learn God's words and to live by them. All the subjects concerning God's verses are explained so as to leave no doubt or room for questions in the reader's mind. The books' sincere, plain, and fluent style ensures that everyone of every age and from every social group can easily understand them. Thanks to their effective, lucid narrative, they can be read at one sitting. Even those who rigorously reject spirituality are influenced by the facts these books document and cannot refute the truthfulness of their contents.

□ This and all the other books by the author can be read individually, or discussed in a group. Readers eager to profit from the books will find discussion very useful, letting them relate their reflections and experiences to one another.

□ In addition, it will be a great service to Islam to contribute to the publication and reading of these books, written solely for the pleasure of God. The author's books are all extremely convincing. For this reason, to communicate true religion to others, one of the most effective methods is encouraging them to read these books.

□ We hope the reader will look through the reviews of his other books at the back of this book. His rich source material on faith-related issues is very useful, and a pleasure to read.

□ In these books, unlike some other books, you will not find the author's personal views, explanations based on dubious sources, styles that are unobservant of the respect and reverence due to sacred subjects, nor hopeless, pessimistic arguments that create doubts in the mind and deviations in the heart.

All translations from the Qur'an are from
The Noble Qur'an: a New Rendering of its Meaning in English
by Hajj Abdalhaqq and Aisha Bewley, published by Bookwork,
Norwich, UK. 1420 CE/1999 AH.

First Edition: November 2015

Translated by: Carl Nino Rossini

Edited by: Ronald Lee Mastro

Published by:

ARAŞTIRMA PUBLISHING

Kayışdağı Mah. Değirmen Sok. No: 3

Ataşehir - İstanbul / Turkey Tel: (+90) 216 6600059

Printed by: Express Basımevi

Deposite İş Merkezi A6 Blok No: 309

İkitelli OSB Küçükçekmece - İstanbul / Turkey

Tel: (+90) 212 6716151

www.harunyahya.com / www.harunyahyaapps.com

en.a9.com.tr - <http://en.harunyahya.tv>

CONTENTS

Introduction.....	12
--------------------------	-----------

CHAPTER 1

Evangelicalism and the Middle Eastern Axis.....	16
--	-----------

A short history of Evangelicalism.....	16
The spread of Evangelicalism and the End Times.....	19
The influence of Evangelicalism.....	21

CHAPTER 2

A century-old objective:

The desire to break up the Middle East.....	28
--	-----------

The Jewish lobby as a tool.....	36
Plans to divide up the Holy Land.....	42
Covert and overt plans for Turkey.....	44
Our reason for exposing the Evangelical plan.....	46

CHAPTER 3

The desired outcome of the Treaty of Sérvés:

Great Kurdistan	50
------------------------------	-----------

The West is using the PKK while the PKK is using the West.....	53
Why was the PKK founded?.....	55
The PKK's imperialist mask.....	78
A shelter for the PKK: North of the 36 th Parallel.....	80
Notorious communist tactics of the past.....	90
The communist tactics employed by the PKK.....	96
1. Women under a mask of imperialism	98
- What do female members of the PKK say?	108
2. Religion under the mask of imperialism	114
- A religious mask well suited to an appearance of Kurdish nationalism.....	121
- The Turkish education curriculum unwittingly support the ideology of the PKK.....	126

3. Concepts of democracy and the institution of the state under a mask of imperialism.....	144
--	-----

CHAPTER 4

The perception of the PKK in the West.....152

Those who want to use the PKK.....	154
Those who fall into the trap of the PKK.....	156
Sensitivity of the Western world about Kobane.....	156
Speculations about the PYD	168
The PYD's pressure upon the Kurdish people in Syria.....	174
The real reason why certain Westerners act in favor of the PKK.....	184
Expecting Öcalan and other PKK members to be pardoned is pitiful.....	189
Global media dictatorship and perception operations in the West.....	200

CHAPTER 5

What kind of danger is Turkey facing?.....218

Secret moves toward "democratic autonomy".....	219
The 2014 local elections and the announcement of a cunning tactic....	220
The desire for territory under the name of "democratic autonomy".....	226
An illegal state within a legal one: The KCK.....	228
1. The dictatorship system and the deification of its leaders.....	236
2. The primitive communal society envisaged by the KCK Contract....	241
3. Imposition, not freedom: KCK citizenship.....	249
4. Efforts to legitimize terror.....	252
5. Founding a new system of state by destroying the current one.....	254
The ultimate goal with the use of the KCK.....	256
The scale of the KCK's set-up.....	258
The PKK never abandoned its weapons and never will!.....	268
Internal executions in the PKK.....	278

CHAPTER 6

How should Turkey act?.....284

An important reminder.....	286
1. The state should bring forth its deterrent demeanor.....	286
2. The village guard system should be reinforced.....	298

3. Kurdish as the native language: A tactic, or a necessity?.....	304
4. Invigorating religiousness.....	313
5. Alliance with the Iraqi Kurdish region and Iran.....	318
6. Forming close alliances with the Western world based on solutions.....	324
7. The definitive solution is to collapse the ideology of the PKK.....	328
Communist terror will not come to an end without education.....	332

CHAPTER 7

Understanding our Kurdish brothers' problems.....334

Kurds caught at crossfire	336
Differentiating between Kurds and the PKK.....	342
There can be no solution without love.....	346
The responsibility of the government.....	348
The responsibilities of the Turkish people.....	358

CHAPTER 8

The time for the salvation of the world is near.....364

A reminder to the Western World.....	365
A reminder to our Kurdish brothers.....	367
The Unity of Islam, but how?.....	368
Glad tidings of the coming of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh).....	372

Conclusion.....380

Appendix:

The Deception of Evolution.....384

The Scientific Collapse of Darwinism.....	385
The First Insurmountable Step: The Origin of Life.....	386
"Life Comes From Life".....	388
Inconclusive Efforts of the Twentieth Century.....	389
The Complex Structure of Life.....	390
Imaginary Mechanism of Evolution.....	393
Lamarck's Impact.....	394
Neo-Darwinism and Mutations.....	396
The Fossil Record: No Sign of Intermediate Forms.....	397

Darwin's Hopes Shattered.....	400
The Tale of Human Evolution.....	401
Darwinian Formula!.....	406
Technology in the Eye and the Ear.....	408
To Whom Does the Consciousness that Sees and Hears within the Brain Belong? 411	
A Materialist Faith.....	413
The Theory of Evolution: The Most Potent Spell in the World.....	415

Introduction

Even under the powerful rule of the Ottoman Empire, the Middle East has always been a place where there was no lack of scheming and internal upheaval. In fact, the correct definition of this area is the "east." It is maritime and land trade routes that made the Middle East like this. These important seas divided the Middle East from the Far East and made it exceedingly important. The oil, natural gas and other wealth of the Middle East reached the West via these trade routes, and western goods and weaponry reached its ports in return. There was much conflict in this important territory. Ottoman governance reined that conflict in, but the collapse of the Ottoman Empire triggered it once again. Even before the end of Ottoman rule, the Middle East was carved up in secret agreements by the Western powers, and plans based on self-interest were set in motion: During the First World War, the Entente powers were able to draw lines dividing the Middle East up among themselves and to control those borders before the fighting had even ended. Newly emerging countries were established on the basis of compasses and rulers as the Middle East was being apportioned, and all the peoples of the Middle East had little choice but to recognize those artificially drawn borders.

Ever since, the Middle East has in fact been under the hegemony of the West. At first, the West wished to govern these countries directly; when it was unable to handle the difficulties, it resorted to dictators and various other players. Some of these dictatorships were overthrown in popular uprisings and others were invaded by the U.S. and coalition forces on a variety of pretexts, although none of these invasions, which resulted in the deaths of millions of people, were regarded as war. Western rule brought hatred with it. The radical forces that the West initially supported against the former Soviet Union during the Cold War split up, branched out and turned into an anti-Western terror movement involving the whole of the Middle East. Looking at the current picture, the once-lovely Middle East is now a battleground of conflict, rage and hatred. Nations angry with the West have fallen out with one another, and Muslims unable to be each other's allies are slaughtering one another instead.

The surprising thing is that this picture is part of a plan drawn up many years ago. The bloodshed in the Middle East is not the result of entirely mistaken administrations and policies, but part of a specially designed scenario that is still operating today. The dead bodies in the Middle East, the hatred incited in people and the way they have become capable of devastating one another's cities is an outcome that certain people and circles were already expecting. The plans drawn up for the Middle East were prepared and set in motion on that basis.

One of the main objectives in that plan is for countries to be broken up. While Syria and Iraq are currently being broken up in line with that plan, different schemes are being implemented for other countries using familiar methods. One of the countries, and perhaps the most important, one that has been targeted since the collapse of the Ottoman Empire and the Treaty of Sèvres, is Turkey.

This book describes, using wide-ranging and important documentation, how and why the plans drawn up for Turkey were set in motion, why the PKK is part of the scenario and what

needs to be done to neutralize it. First, however, we need to look at the source of the plans developed for the Middle East.

Chapter 1

Evangelicalism and the Middle Eastern Axis

A short history of Evangelicalism

Following the division of Christianity into a number of different churches, such as the Catholic and Orthodox churches, a reformist movement grew up within it. This movement criticized the making of money through the sale of indulgences (a kind of document pertaining to the forgiveness of sins sold in Medieval Europe by the Pope to enable the holder to enter paradise), the Mass being performed in Latin and the doctrine of papal infallibility. This new movement, initiated by Martin Luther in Germany and by John Calvin in France and Switzerland, came to be known as "Protestantism."

In Protestantism, repentance was between the individual and God. There was therefore no reason to give money to the Church for it. Papal infallibility was also done away with. The true source, according to this movement, was the Holy Book alone, and not commands issued by the Pope or Church sanctions.

Evangelicalism is one branch of Protestantism; the word means "good news." In Evangelicalism, Matthew, Mark, Luke and John, referred to as the disciples of the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) in the New Testament, are known as "evangelists." It was Martin Luther who employed the term "evangelical" first.

Luther saw that the New Testament had been misinterpreted and corrupted by the Catholic Church, for which reason he attached greater importance to the Old Testament (the Torah and the Psalms). Protestantism was subsequently divided into scores of different denominations, but none of these denominations abandoned the central view about essential beliefs and the Holy Scripture that included the Old Testament.¹

Evangelicalism is an important and necessary reform in turning Christians to the Gospels - and also the Torah - by lifting pressure on the faith from the Church. The supporters of Evangelicalism, a sincere form of belief, have always maintained loving and peaceable attributes and, as we shall be seeing in due course, made a great contribution to the spread of religion due to the importance they attached to "evangelizing." Again as we shall be seeing, Evangelicals' belief in the End Times and excitement at the prospect of seeing the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) indicate a great love and religious devotion. From that perspective, they have much in common with true Muslims who abide by the Qur'an.

As in all religions, however, there are various sections in Evangelicalism that interpret the teachings in question rather differently, that misunderstand the subjects related to the End

Times and that seek to equate Christianity, a religion of peace, and the Prophet Jesus (pbuh), an envoy of peace, with war. These people invent what they regard as powerful evidence for scenarios of war on the basis of various passages in the Gospel. They imagine they are being perfectly honest, that they are basing themselves on the Gospel and doing what is right, but they fail to recognize the various metaphorical statements that occur in the depths of the Gospel. The second problem in this error of interpretation is that they find it difficult to turn to the Qur'an, sent down as a confirmation of the Gospel and the Torah: Yet the coming of the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is explicitly revealed in the Qur'an, as well as a climate of peace in which all people believe.

This book is based on the views of that segment of Evangelical Christians who interpret the End Times in a dangerous manner and one very different to that described in the Divine scriptures. These people – who are generally well-intentioned – are pioneers for a horrifying scenario, albeit most likely unwittingly. They are striving to accelerate the End Times scenarios in the Middle East but are actually preparing a bloody foundation there. This will all be clarified in due course.

The spread of Evangelicalism and the End Times

The various movements that emerged within Protestantism up until the 18th century later settled in different parts of the world under the influence of colonialism. The most important of these was the North American continent. Evangelical thinking is known to have spread more rapidly following journeys to America by the Anglican clergyman John Nelson Darby. Darby's followers also described their movement as "dispensationalism."

The primary distinguishing feature of these people **is their belief in the return of the Messiah in the End Days and in Domsday**. The conditions under which they believe the Messiah will return are as follows:

- The foundation of a Jewish state in the Holy Land;
- Jerusalem being its capital;
- The rebuilding of the Temple of Solomon;
- The preaching of the Gospel to all mankind;
- The oppression of Jews and believers (Christians);
- The Battle of Armageddon;
- The ascent of believers (Christians) into heaven.

As this list shows, Evangelicals are essentially Zionist Christians. They believe that the establishment of a Jewish state in the Holy Land is paramount for the coming of the Messiah. They have therefore always been in a state of alliance with Zionist Jews.

One of the most important pieces of evidence for this is the Zionist congresses. The first Zionist Congress was held by Theodor Herzl in 1897 and called for the return of the Jews to the

Holy Land. In 1985, the Second Christian Zionist Congress was held in Basel, the same city and in the same building where the First Zionist Congress opened. A resolution at that congress urged Israel to annex the West Bank. Jan Willem van der Hoeven, spokesman for the International Christian Embassy, said this in response to a Jew who objected to that idea; "We don't care what the Israelis vote! We care what God says! And God gave that land to the Jews!"²

That reaction is very important in terms of showing the bounds of the Evangelical Zionism that still persists today because this movement that appears to be aimed at protecting the Jews and Jewish lands, is in fact preparing the way for an end in which the Jews will be slaughtered. According to this belief, only 144,000 Jews who convert to Christianity will survive, while the other Jews, and "all Muslims," will be slaughtered.

We shall be looking at this matter shortly.

The state of Israel was founded in 1948, and Jerusalem was declared its capital in 1967: Two of the signs awaited by the Evangelicals thus came true. The more these portents, signs of the End Times, came about, the more the Evangelicals set about accelerating what they believe to be the final outcome. That is why efforts to reshape the Middle East in the name of the Battle of Armageddon have gained impetus in this century.

The influence of Evangelicalism

As in all faiths and schools, Christian denominations are based on being a fine and good servant of God and Evangelicalism was also founded on that basis. However, one of the main distinguishing features between Evangelicalism and other branches of Christianity is the question of "preaching the Word," on which less emphasis is placed in the latter. As a requirement of their faith, the followers of this sect engaged in active missionary work, preaching the word to other people. As time passed, Evangelicalism thus became increasingly well known and widespread, particularly in America.

We can see this from the figures. In Civil War America (1861-1865) the number of members of the Evangelical Church was 4 million, whereas today it is put at 70 million. According to the figures for 2014, 25.4% of Americans describe themselves as Evangelicals.³ Although Evangelicalism at first espoused different beliefs to those of Catholicism, Evangelical belief today is no longer in such great conflict with Catholic belief.

It needs to be made clear that, although Christianity has sometimes turned away from its essence as a result of conflicting interpretations and has split itself into different sects, we, as Muslims, still wish to see Christian belief and faith in God grow, especially at a time when the outright denial of God is spreading like wildfire. Of course Christians must be more devout, of course they must espouse the Holy Book more and spirituality must be strengthened in America and all other countries where Christianity is widespread. America and other countries have invariably prospered and grown happy in line with their religious devotion. Therefore, we always wish to see and fully encourage the growth and strengthening of Islam among Muslims, of Christianity among Christians and of Judaism among Jews.

In addition, the Evangelical belief in the coming of the Messiah is also an issue of faith to be praised in our eyes. Muslims also are in expectation of the appearance of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh)

and the return of the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) in the End Times, in which we are living now. It is therefore grounds for rejoicing that Christians hold a similar belief. It represents a point in common that will enhance our love and support for Christians and strengthen our alliance with them.

There is nothing peculiar about the Evangelical expectation of a state of Israel in the Middle East. In the verses of the Qur'an, the Jews have the right to live in the Holy Land, and this is set out explicitly in several verses, as it also is in the Torah. Verses 20 and 21 of Surat al-Ma'ida read:

Remember when Moses said to his people, "My people! Remember God's blessing to you when He appointed prophets among you and appointed kings for you, and gave you what He had not given to anyone else in all the worlds! My people! Enter the Holy Land which God has ordained for you. Do not turn back in your tracks and so become transformed into losers." (Qur'an, 5:20-21)

Therefore, for Muslims, seeing Jews in the Holy Land even after 5,000 years means seeing God's promise come to pass and this is a reason for rejoicing. One of our greatest hopes is to see Jews, Christians and Muslims living together in peace in those lands, as they did in the past.

What we shall be concentrating on, and the subject of our criticism, is the efforts on the part of some Evangelicals to shape the Middle East in line with their expectations of war in the region, which represents a manifestation of their desire to accelerate the coming of the Messiah in one sense, and the fact that some of their erroneous belief and hopes regarding the Holy Land have reached dangerous dimensions.

First of all, the time of the coming of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) and the Messiah is ordained in destiny by God. Therefore, nobody, no circumstances and no signs can accelerate or bring forward that coming. The battle of Armageddon awaited in the Middle East has in fact already happened. The 2003 Iraq War was a major battle and a sign of the End Times, referred to as Armageddon in the Bible and described with all the relevant portents in the hadiths and the Torah. (For more detail on this, see the chapter "Some Christians' Error Regarding Armageddon" in the book *Christians Must Heed Jesus* by Harun Yahya)

Therefore, no bloody battle of the kind expected by the Evangelicals will take place in the near future. It also needs to be made clear that the concept of the Holy Land as described by the Evangelicals is different to that found in Jewish belief, and it involves wider borders. As a result, the idea of preparing the Middle East for war and preparations along those lines are false in all respects. One of their main errors is the dream of building a Great Kurdistan by breaking up the four countries that represent the backbone of the Middle East. This book describes why this plan is wrong under current conditions and the kind of tragedy that the pursuit of such a dream would inflict on the Middle East, Europe and then the entire world.

Chapter 2

A Century-old Objective: The Desire to Break up the Middle East

Plans concerning the weakening and the break-up of the Middle East before the Ottoman Empire collapsed based on such agreements as Sykes-Picot were probably one of the subjects that most preoccupied and were most discussed by intelligence agencies for many years. Heads of states determined their strategies, and countries their attitudes, on that basis. That is because, as we have seen above, according to Christian Evangelical Fundamentalist belief, the Battle of Armageddon, heralding the return of the Prophet Jesus (pbuh), was expected to take place in those lands. The infrastructure had to be prepared and the climate made suitable for this important appearance.

Various neoconservatives, representing the political wing of Evangelicalism in America, are the main shapers of the plans for the Middle East. This policy they follow sometimes represents a guiding force, sometimes entirely disregards international law and sometimes is even at complete variance with basic U.S. foreign policy. The best example of this is perhaps the Iraq War.

President Ronald Reagan was a neoconservative representative and believed throughout his life that he would see Doomsday. He claimed that his interest in the anti-missile defense system was also to do with his belief in Doomsday. According to Ezekiel 38 and 39 in the Old Testament, a nuclear war would take place on the Plain of Megiddo on Doomsday: Burning sulfur would pour down with torrents of rain, mountains would be overturned and earthquakes would take place. Evangelicals believe that a nuclear explosion is necessary for this to happen. They therefore thought that the groundwork for this was needed to be prepared. Reagan therefore shaped his Middle Eastern policy accordingly and even quoted from the Old Testament to justify the bombing of Libya. According to that view, Libya was one of the major nations that would attack the People of Israel in the End Times. Reagan therefore punished it in advance.⁴

Another neoconservative representative, the U.S. President George W. Bush, also believed that he had been appointed by God. He claimed to have received revelation from God during the Iraq War and frequently used terms such as "holy war," "axis of evil," "crusades" and "gut instinct." Iraq was devastated on the pretext of weapons of mass destruction. The Americans suffered severe losses as well and abandoned the country without finding any functional WMD's and the impression of the Iraq War across the world was one of failure. Yet the requirements of Evangelical belief had been implemented, and in their eyes the operation had been quite a success to that end. Iraq had been broken up, just as required, an autonomous Kurdish region

had been established and a powerful country ruled by a dictator such as Saddam had turned into an unstable front wracked by terror.

Bush based the attack on Iraq from these words from the Old Testament:

*This is what the Lord says: "See, I will stir up the spirit of a destroyer against Babylon and the people of Leb Kamai. **I will send foreigners to Babylon to winnow her and to devastate her land; they will oppose her on every side in the day of her disaster.** Let not the archer string his bow, nor let him put on his armor. **Do not spare her young men; completely destroy her army. They will fall down slain in Babylon, fatally wounded in her streets.**" (Jeremiah, 51:1-4)*

Since these words from the Old Testament were taken as a prophecy they began being acted on by Bush, an Evangelical in command of a superpower, the USA. The picture that emerged during the war exactly matching Evangelical objectives meant another step toward Doomsday. Indeed, these words by late Mustafa al-Barzani in the Kurdish region of Iraq, that an autonomous Kurdish region was "ready to become the 51st state" of the USA have to a large extent become a reality now.⁵

In one sense these things were all manufactured as a kind of investment in the future; this instability in Iraq led the way to the emergence and strengthening of numerous radical groups. ISIL, to which the world has still failed to find a solution, emerged in Iraq while al-Qaeda was aiming its attacks mostly against Iraq. Therefore, the factor responsible for triggering the current state of affairs, not only of Iraq but also of Syria, Lebanon, Yemen, Libya, and even Egypt, was the unjustified war initiated in Iraq. Instability, terror, and fragmentation came to the region exactly as planned.

The plan also requires that no strong and stable Muslim country should remain in the Middle East. The Middle East must be broken up into very small artificial units that are weak and devoid of will, purpose and character, and thus easy to control. They must be of such a kind that if they escape control or in the event of a disagreement they can easily be destroyed through a simple military operation. The countries of the Gulf are not part of this, since they are already largely under American control and are not part of the Holy Land in which Armageddon is expected to take place. To date, the plan has been successfully (in their eyes) implemented in Iraq, Syria and Egypt. Just two countries remain; Turkey and Iran. These can be broken up and destabilized through the establishment of a Great Kurdistan. Look carefully at the Middle East; all the plans are aimed in that direction.

The main reason for the frequent publication of maps in the US and European press showing Turkey, Saudi Arabia, Iraq, Iran, Syria, Libya, Lebanon and Yemen all broken up in various ways is to prepare the subconscious foundations for this in global public opinion by depicting it as a political requirement. As wars without victors destabilize the region, the arms industry is kept alive and well, stocks of weapons that are not sold off are melted down and enormous capital is obtained for the manufacture of new weapons. The segment of the banking sector that earns revenue from sudden crises also benefits from the climate of uncertainty in the Middle East.

Looked at in the light of all these developments, the picture in the Middle East is by no means coincidental. The maps and plans drawn up a hundred years ago now seem to have been made a reality. There is no doubt that perhaps the major share of the blame lies with some Muslims, who produced the infrastructure for these plans - knowingly or otherwise - and permitted this

disorder, who have failed to ally themselves with one another and who even regard disputes as a matter of honor. We shall be looking at this in due course.

The Jewish lobby as a tool

When they are in the administration in America and even when they are not, the neoconservatives still remain highly influential by way of various think-tanks and civil society organizations. Of course, the support they receive from some Jews and the Jewish lobby occupies an important place in this. However, a serious discrepancy emerges at this point. As we have already seen, some Evangelicals believe that with the coming of the Prophet Jesus (pbuh), only 144,000 Jews will be left alive by converting to Christianity, while the others will be slaughtered in that great war. Therefore, some Evangelicals regard the Jews as being on the wrong path and are preparing for a war in which they will be slaughtered. On that basis, we may say that these Evangelicals' attitude toward the Jews is not one of a genuine alliance; it is simply a means to an end.

One can see that in various statements by widely-known Evangelicals themselves. Asked during an address about the identity of the antichrist, the famous 20th-century Evangelical Jerry Falwell gave a most interesting answer: *"The Antichrist will, by necessity, be a Jewish male."*⁶ In an address given years before, Billy Graham said: *"A lot of the Jews are great friends of mine. They swarm around me and are friendly to me, because they know that I am friendly to Israel and so forth. But they don't know how I really feel about what they're doing to this country, and I have no power and no way to handle them."* Following the revelation of these words, Graham was forced to say, *"Although I have no memory of the occasion, I deeply regret comments I apparently made... some 30 years ago... They do not reflect my views and I sincerely apologize for any offense caused by the remarks.... Throughout my ministry, I have sought to build bridges between Jews and Christians."*⁷

These quotes show that the way some Evangelicals appear to support the Jews is simply due to the fact that this represents one of their preconditions for Doomsday. In other words, in the eyes of some Evangelicals the Jews are simply a tool for achieving that end. While some Jews are unaware of that, others make no objection, despite being well aware of that aim. That is because while the supporters of Zionism are very few in number, the Jews in question are pleased that their own beliefs are being supported, albeit in a somewhat backhanded way.

Let us now reiterate an important point we made at the beginning of this book: Of course not all Evangelicals or all neoconservatives share these views. Indeed, the great majority has no desire to see a war that will end in the devastation of the Middle East and harbor no hostility toward Jews and Muslims. Indeed, the majority of them are people of love who wish to build bridges between the faiths, who are striving hard to do so and who feel a genuine love for Muslims and Jews.

It needs to be remembered that the Evangelicals described herein, and who harbor a deep expectation of war, hold this view due to misinterpretation. Since the purpose of this book is to set out this error, the logical flaws inherent in the scenario of war in which only 144,000 Jews will be left alive also need to be revealed. The fact is that so long as they adhere to such a belief system it will be next to impossible for these Evangelicals to establish genuine unity and

friendship with the Jews. For the Jews meanwhile, the situation is perilous and uncertain. There is no probability of a Christian with such a perspective ever being able to regard a Jew as a true friend. At the same time, Jews aware of this will inevitably doubt the sincerity and friendship of Christians who believe in such a scenario of slaughter against themselves. Under those conditions, temporary alliances between representatives of the two faiths will be mere window dressing, and a true alliance will be impossible to forge, as is to be expected when one group expects the other group to serve as little more than kindling for their apocalyptic vision.

Yet an alliance between the faiths is vitally important and necessary in the End Times. Even for that reason alone, there are clearly a number of problems in the expectations in question in Evangelical belief.

The situation is very much worse from the Muslim perspective; that is because in the opinion of some Evangelicals, the final battle will end in the slaughter of all Muslims. An Evangelical who believes that will inevitably live in the belief that all Muslims need to be killed, even someone whose goodness and honesty he is sure of, for whom he feels love and respect and whom he trusts with his whole heart. That is a terrifying state of affairs both for the Christian in question and for a Muslim who wishes to be in an alliance with and to love him. The inevitable conclusion is that there can never be any alliance or solidarity between Christians and Muslims, and that would mean the earth becoming a place of horror where peace can never come; that erroneous worldview alone is enough to spark a comprehensive policy of enmity. It is impossible for an Evangelical Christian who thinks like that to establish a true interfaith friendship. Such a life is not the kind of life that God desires. A true religion can obviously never teach such a policy of enmity nor such a scenario of slaughter. That means there must be a gargantuan error in the interpretation of religion.

It is also a violation of reason and faith to imagine that the Prophet Jesus (pbuh), sent to the world as a representative of peace and love, and also a prophet of Muslims, could bring about slaughter in the End Times, something which is totally at variance with the reason of his creation. A true Christian who is properly acquainted with the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) needs to be suspicious of any such idea. Such a terrifying plan, one that would make love and peace on earth impossible, is incompatible with both the law of God and the purpose behind the sending of the prophets. There is, therefore, a manifest misunderstanding here and a question of perception. (For further details on this subject see *Christians Must Heed Jesus* by Harun Yahya)

Plans to divide up the Holy Land

The Old Testament describes the promised land as follows: "To your descendants I give this land, from the Wadi of Egypt to the great river, the Euphrates— the land of the Kenites, Kenizzites, Kadmonites, Hittites, Perizzites, Rephaites, Amorites, Canaanites, Girgashites and Jebusites." (Genesis 15:18-21)

For Evangelicals, this passage from the Old Testament describes the Holy Land, and these lands have to be taken by the Jews before the coming of the Prophet Jesus (pbuh). These lands between the Nile and the Euphrates include parts of Iraq, Syria, Egypt, Sudan, and Turkey and all of Jordan, Lebanon, and Kuwait.

The taking over of these lands is thus of great importance for some Evangelicals and represents a significant portent of the Last Coming.

The thing about this map of concern to Turkey is that according to the Evangelicals, this Holy Land also includes Adana, Gaziantep, Hatay, Kahramanmaraş, and Adıyaman; some sources actually include all of Southeast Turkey. A great deal of stability and democracy have been achieved during the 90 years of the Turkish Republic. The constant instability in the region in question, while the country has been making enormous progress in recent years, is thought-provoking. Turkey is obviously part of this plan, based on a series of misunderstood prophecies, to break up the Middle East, which explains the constant state of unease in the Southeast Turkey.

One very important point needs to be mentioned here. For the Jews, the Holy Land, that is described as stretching from the Nile to the Euphrates in the Old Testament, extends (from east to west) from the Mediterranean to the River Jordan and (from south to north) from Sinai to the Hasbani River in northern Lebanon. That definition therefore includes the current state of Israel, but not Turkey. However, some Evangelicals interpret the passages of the Old Testament in question rather differently. One of the most important reasons for this difference is that some Christians have expanded the concept of the "Holy Land" to include not just those promised to the Prophet Moses (pbuh), but also those promised to the Prophet Abraham (pbuh). However, the Old Testament does not employ the term "Holy Land" in that context. Therefore, generally, the Jews do not regard this broad map described by the Evangelicals as accurate, for which reason they do not favor the desire to expand the Holy Land outside the current borders of Israel.

Covert and overt plans for Turkey

The term "break-up" has been much employed in recent years, particularly along with the upheaval that followed the Arab Spring. Iraq, which has never been free of attacks and turmoil, ended up being invaded by ISIL and is today more or less officially divided into three parts. Syria has been wracked by civil war since 2011, and is currently divided into six separate parts. There are also smaller fragments within these main parts. Egypt is going through a time of major instability, and the tribes in the Sinai Peninsula are restless. Libya is being rocked by coups, and there is unending turmoil in Sudan and Yemen.

Two countries stand out amidst all this turmoil; Iran and Turkey. Although Iran has been subjected to sanctions for a long time due to its nuclear activities, it is stable and powerful in terms of having observer status in the Shanghai Cooperation Organisation and being an ally in the Russian-Chinese axis. Turkey, a democratic member of NATO and ally of the West, has strongly opposed any break-up despite the PKK terror of the last 40 years, has grown stronger despite the conditions in the region and has undergone major changes with the reforms of the last 10 years. Although Turkey is the subject of criticism on the subjects of its relations with its neighbors, Islamization and a perception of turning away from the West, it has made great progress in the region in economic, commercial and democratic terms, and has been largely unaffected by the turmoil in the area.

This state of affairs in Turkey is therefore a cause for concern to those making plans for the Middle East, some of whom have no compunction about openly expressing that alarm; their plan

is based on countries being weakened, rather than growing stronger. The plan also involves an imaginary puppet state in Mesopotamia, where they think Armageddon will take place, under their own control, independent of the Arab, Turkish or Persian world, where they will be able to do as they please: Great Kurdistan.

We shall look at the evidence showing what a major error this dream is in due course.

Our reason for exposing the Evangelical plan

It is important for this important fact to be emphasized several times throughout the book: Our aim in exposing the Evangelical plans set out in this book is not to denigrate the Evangelicals or the neoconservatives. These people may imagine they are acting properly in the light of their beliefs. As God makes clear in several verses of the Qur'an, Christians and Jews are Muslims' friends and brothers: All those parts of the Torah and the Gospel that are compatible with the Qur'an are valid in the eyes of Muslims too, and Muslims have a responsibility to respect these two Abrahamic faiths and to treat their members with love and affection. It is therefore very important for it to be known that this book you are reading was not written to offend or denigrate any faith or sect or their members.

In addition, the fact is that whatever plan is set in motion in Islamic territories, it is the Muslims themselves who live in those lands and fail to be united who are responsible for any turmoil arising in them. Blaming others for this state of turmoil in the Middle East means a failure to grasp the real problem. The real problem in the Middle East - and other Muslim lands - is that Muslims are divided on various sectarian and ethnic pretexts and fail to unite and come together. Sadly, a great majority of them have adopted a false religion of nonsense under the name of Islam, have turned their backs on the Qur'an and fail to understand God's message to them in the Qur'an. It has, of course, been quite easy for hatred to grow in a society that has remained backward under the influence of the religion of nonsense, one that is fragmented, a culture that regards women as worthless, democracy as meaningless and the arts as forbidden. It is therefore the Muslim world that is most easily affected by tiny sparks and allows its own region to turn into a place of turmoil that is largely responsible for this picture.

On the other hand, when we look at the course they take, Evangelicals' aims, and the errors in the paths and methods selected by them to achieve that aim, may result in great and terrible consequences for the Middle East. The terrible outcome we discuss here is the birth and spread of a Marxist system that will inflict disaster on the world, and its dissemination across the world. When that happens, the Evangelicals will realize that what they expected has not happened, and that the world is headed towards destruction. It is essential to issue a warning before it is too late.

If the true facts on this subject are laid out, then it will be possible to build a more peaceable and better Middle East together with America and Europe, and especially with the neoconservatives. The potentially disastrous price to be paid as a result of this plan therefore needs to be made clear before it is too late.

Chapter 3

A Century-old Objective: The Desire to Break up the Middle East

The Treaty of Sèvres, signed in 1920 and annulled by Atatürk, clearly and officially revealed to the eyes of the Turkish people the greatest desires of the West, which had persisted for as long as the Ottoman Empire had existed. Already having lost the Middle East, the Arabian Peninsula, the Balkans and Africa, the Ottoman Empire were now ordered to deliver the Aegean coast and to provide land for Armenia in the northeast and for Kurdistan in the southeast. Although it was shelved when the Turkish Parliament refused to recognize the Treaty of Sèvres, the desire in it, to see the establishment of Kurdistan, never came to an end. That is because Mesopotamia was at the heart of prophecies and absolutely had to be brought under control.

As is known, Mesopotamia includes the southeast of Turkey, the southwest of Iran and parts of Iraq and Syria. One important feature of this region is that it has a substantial ethnic Kurdish population. Therefore, the current - and also the retroactive - aim of some of the Evangelical Christians and their political supporters has been to be able to build a new Kurdish state in the area by breaking up the powerful states in the region, namely Turkey, Iran, Syria, and Iraq. According to them, this new state needed to have two characteristics; it had to be an unconditional ally of the USA and Europe and it had to be a puppet state that fulfills all the desires of the USA and Europe.

This puppet state will provide a highly important strategic area for the West in the Middle East, represent an ideal strategic area to set up bases and constitute the appropriate environment, facilities and place for the awaited War of Armageddon.

Therefore, the Great Kurdistan project is one that has been officially in action since the time of the Treaty of Sèvres. It targets four countries with Kurdish populations. This aim within the plan of destabilization has been achieved in the cases of Iraq and Syria. There is an autonomous Kurdish area in Iraq and a Kurdish settlement area consisting of several cantons in Syria. At the present time, the worsening turmoil in Iraq has led to talk of the Autonomous Kurdish Administration "declaring independence". As a matter of fact, the Iraqi Constitution is well suited to that. If the local population gives approval, the autonomous administration can break away as an autonomous state.

The desired progress also seems to have been made in terms of the Kurds in Syria, the second stage of the plan. The Kurdish administration divided into cantons here frequently declares autonomy. As a result of finding no respondent due to the civil war in Syria, it always returns to the existing system. However, there is one very noteworthy element in this stage; the

extreme sensitivity of Western countries regarding the Kurdish area in Syria. This will be looked at a little bit further on.

As we have previously stated, Iran and Turkey, the third and fourth stages of the plan, represent an important problem due to their being stable countries. This intricate plan is therefore still proceeding on the basis of bringing these two countries to heel. The basic element of the objective here, and that we need to discuss in the context of Turkey, is the PKK. That is because the Marxist-Leninist, anarchist communist PKK that has for years been on the list of terrorist organizations in U.S. and Europe, is trying to cozy up to the West to break Turkey apart. Meanwhile, some Western deep state services are turning a blind eye to the danger of the PKK in order to split Turkey apart. We are therefore looking at a dangerous environment in which the PKK is using the West, and the West is using the PKK.

The West is using the PKK while the PKK is using the West

Someone getting to know the PKK from articles in the daily papers today will easily regard the PKK, a communist terror organization, as Kurdish fighters that the West should be supporting because that is how the international mainstream media portray the PKK, especially of late.

The reason for that is that a sphere of mutual interests has been born. The communist PKK which has been striving to break away the southeast of Turkey for the last 40 years and Western deep state apparatuses also trying to break the region away have come together around common values. Adopting a new guise, the PKK is making cunning efforts to overcome the "communism" factor, the West's chief objection. Treacherous communist terrorists have donned a new mask and now appear as democratic Kurdish fighters struggling for an identity and their rights. This has served the West's interests, and it now regards the PKK as a good tool for achieving its own ends, all the while failing to realize the kind of rod it is making for its own back.

It is a necessity for us to explain that scourge; the PKK is not a group of heroes fighting for their Kurdish identity, but a bloody Leninist terror organization wearing an imperialist mask that STILL seeks to spread communism and that cares nothing about the Kurdish people or a Kurdish identity. It is very important to differentiate between the Kurds living in the region and the terrorists of the PKK.

The PKK's imperialist mask needs to be exposed in order to show one part of the West that considers entering into an alliance with the PKK the kind of scourge they are dealing with. If the Western powers in question still believe in their ideology based on fighting communism, we have some bad news for them. They are in an alliance with bloody communists!

Why was the PKK founded?

The PKK movement began in the universities as a student movement and adopted the name of "Apoists" in 1977, then abandoned that name, and that of the "Kurdish Revolutionaries" and replaced that moniker with that of the National Liberation Army. In time, most of the leftist

groups started to establish links with this organization because the basic ideology of the organization is based on Marxism-Leninism. These statements by Abdullah Öcalan, the leader of the group at that time, may be regarded as the PKK's first founding declaration:

*We will investigate and examine Marxism and Leninism in the classic sense. We will perform a general analysis of the world, the Middle East and Turkey guided by these ideologies. On the basis of that perspective, East and Southeast Anatolia (North Kurdistan) are in the position of a colony. Turkey is a colonialist state. Moreover, the other parts of Kurdistan, are also under colonial rule of Iran, Iraq and Syria.*⁸

Other written documents setting out the PKK's goals are the Path of the Kurdistan Revolution (Manifesto) published in 1978 and Party Program. The PKK's objective is summarized as follows in the Party Program, or rather the Draft drawn up by Öcalan:

*Kurdistan is divided into four by four colonialist states, Turkey, Iran, Iraq and Syria. The largest part is Turkish Kurdistan. Semi-feudal relations apply here. Turkish Kurdistan will be in the vanguard of the revolution. The characteristic of this revolution is a democratic revolution of the nation. **The minimum objective is to build an independent, democratic and united Kurdistan by overthrowing colonialism. The maximum objective is to establish a state founded on Marxist-Leninist principles.** The proletariat is the force that will lead the revolution. The basic force in the revolution is the peasant. The basic alliance is the one between the peasant, the worker and the intellectual.*⁹

The Statutes, published at the same time, set out the basic character of the party to be set up to realize the objectives described in the program. The entire ideology of the organization, which describes itself as Marxist-Leninist in the Manifesto, the Program and the Statutes is built on the concepts of "force and colonialism". Accordingly, the utmost revolutionary violence must be employed against the colonialist powers and those colonialist powers must be compelled to recognize the organization.¹⁰ Engels' "Theory of Force" was taken as a basis and the statements by Marx and Engels to the effect that violence must not be neglected on the road to proletarian rule were regarded as their guide.

Abdullah Öcalan also adopted those views and suggested the indispensability of violence, setting these views out as follows in his book *The Role of Force in Kurdistan*:

*...By implementing the guerilla war with the active war, we will try to destroy the military superiority of our enemy and make them withdraw even more and increase the speed of the development of the revolution in Turkey. In this tragic phase of equilibrium, if the guerilla war and the active war going on in Kurdistan is supported by a developed revolutionary war in Turkey as well and if a proletariat and civil uprising come up in Turkey including major cities, this rebellion could be extended until Kurdistan and the bourgeois army could be dissolved with the civil uprising in Turkey and Kurdistan, and thus the political superiority of the revolution could be turned into military superiority, the rule of the bourgeois could be overthrown and the revolution could thus be brought to victory...*¹¹

Öcalan, wishing to see a "dictatorship of the proletariat" against the "bourgeoisie", and stating that this is only possible through "revolution" and "terror", describes the ideals of Marx and the policies of Lenin. Lenin describes his ideal revolution as follows:

*A bourgeois revolution is absolutely necessary in the interests of the proletariat. The more complete, determined, and consistent the bourgeois revolution, the more assured will the proletariat's struggle be against the bourgeoisie and for socialism... As the French say, "to change the rifle from one shoulder to the other", i.e., **to turn against the bourgeoisie the weapon the bourgeois revolution will supply them with, the liberty the revolution will bring...***¹²

Öcalan, who formulated his own philosophy in the light of these ideas, has never concealed his Marxist approach or the mindset by which he describes himself as the Lenin of this century:

*...Of course later on, the Marxism and Leninism will be preferred. The ABC of Socialism (Leo Huberman) was the first classic that I have taken into my hands. I put it under my pillow when I read it and said that is it. I believe my preference for Socialism became definite in 1969.*¹³

*Lenin represented it in the 1900s, and I represent the 21st-century socialism, and I am building the new socialism by fighting real socialism and imperialism.*¹⁴

Öcalan describes how the PKK was constructed on the Marxist-Leninist tradition and will continue along those same principles in the future:

*The PKK has experienced a development in line with the Marxist-Leninist tradition. It is clear that from then on it will take shape on the basis of that legacy, which is inseparable in the way that flesh is joined to bone.*¹⁵

In an address on May 1st, 1982, he said:

Yet we should be well aware of the fact that if the history of Kurdistan desires to keep up with the times, it has to be founded completely on the fact of the working class. No matter what unsuitable conditions it may live under, IT MUST BE BASED on the objective force of the working class, and ON MARXISM-LENINISM, its science and guide to action; AND NOTE THAT THE REASON FOR OUR EXISTENCE IS TOTALLY GROUNDED IN THAT FACT... If those tribal walls, those feudal fences had not been breached, MARXISM-LENINISM, THE MODERN AND THE MOST REVOLUTIONARY WAY OF THINKING would never have entered our heads.

These explicit statements by Öcalan and the information in the organization's Manifesto, Program and Statutes show that the ultimate aim of the PKK is to establish a Kurdistan founded on Marxist-Leninist principles. Iran, Iraq, Turkey, and Syria, which comprise that region, are described as "colonialist" states, and the PKK settled on a colonialist approach in order to justify its aims. Members of the organization adopt working class movements in capitalist countries as their role models and regard those who bring such movements about as their allies. Their aims are to bring about a "classless" society in an area established under the name of "Socialist Kurdistan" and a communal system. Their manifestos contain calls to arms for that purpose.

One of the most important requirements of this objective is without doubt the desire to oppose all imperialist powers. For that reason, the policies and even the very existence of America and the pro-American West are opposed. The Manifesto essentially focuses on the aim of annihilating the American imperialist mindset. As required by Marxist thinking, the Marxist PKK therefore fiercely opposes the USA and all those it regards as imperialist forces.

The part of the PKK program titled "The Duties of the Kurdistan Revolution" speaks of the need to reject any proposals for a solution (including regional autonomy) that may be forthcoming from the Republic of Turkey, which is described as "colonialist". The aim behind that rejection stems from the idea of the necessity to break up the Republic of Turkey.

The Manifesto sets out the objective of establishing military and police control over some parts of Southeast Turkey, by forcing the Turkish security forces to pull out of rural areas and to withdraw from the Turkish-Iraqi border, in order to be able to build a communist Kurdistan. Once liberated rebel areas have been established, attacks in cities and the spreading of disorder and uprisings throughout the region will be set in motion. The PKK's existing armed forces will be turned into a conventional army, whose aim will be to defeat the Turkish Army. As a result of all this, it expresses the expectation that the Turkish Army will ultimately feel compelled to abandon the territories described as "Kurdistan".¹⁶

Our reason for citing these details in the PKK Manifesto is to reveal that the PKK is a Marxist-Leninist organization whose aim is to wage war against all imperialist or capitalist countries, states and systems. The PKK is intent on establishing a communist state by "tearing apart" Turkey and neighboring countries with Kurdish populations. That is why it was founded and it has never to this day deviated from that aim.

As the world has changed, and borders in the Middle East have become more sensitive and the balances of power have altered, the PKK has, over the years, felt the need to adopt an imperialist guise. There are many reasons for this and we will be looking at these in subsequent chapters. The point needing to be emphasized here is the PKK's Marxist appearance at the time it was founded and to prevent it being deceptive for many countries and intellectuals with its current imperialist mask. Beneath the PKK's present guise lies a Marxist-Leninist terror organization intent on building a communist world state.

The PKK's imperialist mask

Question: Why should the West, which is unhappy with Saddam, wish to see Turkey grow stronger?

Öcalan: However, this will also create a Kurdish autonomy. That will weaken Turkey, will know how to weaken her.

Question: Do you mean that Kurdish autonomy will also restrain Turkey?

Öcalan: This pro-Western Kurdish autonomous region will restrain Turkey for the West. It will restrain the Arabs and Iran. From that point of view, I think the West will delight in Kurdish autonomy. They will spread this region out toward Turkey and Iran. That is what the West wants, of course.¹⁷

These words, taken from an interview PKK leader Abdullah Öcalan gave to Rafet Ballı in 1991, are quite sufficient to reveal the heart of the matter. Some forces in the West long to see Kurdish autonomy in Turkey. The goal here, just as Öcalan says, is to restrain Turkey, the Arabs and Iran. A Kurdish region extending to Turkey and Iran is just what the forces in question in the West

want to see. That is highly compatible with the interests of the deep state services discussed in detail above.

The plan in question was actually discovered by Öcalan in the early 1990s. Those were years when the PKK suffered severe losses in Turkey, when the organization suffered a veritable hemorrhaging of manpower, lost a vast number of supporters and was unable to muster new recruits. According to their own statements, the actions they perpetrated as a Marxist-Leninist organization to a large extent came back to haunt and seriously weaken them.

That same period was also when the Gulf War began, when a safe zone was established to the north of the 36th Parallel as a result of that war and when Iraqi Kurds were placed under protection. Losing strength, the PKK went towards a major tactical policy of change based on regarding the protection of the Kurds by the coalition forces as a sign of a future autonomous Kurdish region in Iraq. So wide-ranging was that change that the PKK adopted a mask that gave no indication of its Leninist heart, hid its true face under a mask of imperialism and declared itself to be the most fervent ally of the entire West, and particularly the USA. So much so that the PKK, whose ultimate aim is the destruction of capitalism, and the USA at its head, has changed everything, from its own flag to its language in order to enjoy U.S. protection.

A shelter for the PKK: North of the 36th Parallel

When the number of Kurdish refugees fleeing from Iraq in the immediate wake of the Gulf War reached alarming levels, a safe zone was set up on the Turkish-Iraqi border. In April 1991, the U.S. government warned Iraq not to engage in any activity by land or air in the north of the 36th Parallel, where the Kurds were. The area north of the 36th Parallel being closed to Iraqi planes, a multinational force known as the Combined Task Force being installed in the region and subsequent developments led to the emergence of a *de facto* Kurdish administration in northern Iraq. In July 1991, a Poised Hammer Force consisting of 77 planes and helicopters and 1,862 military personnel from countries such as Turkey, the U.S., Great Britain and France was installed inside the Turkish border for the protection of the no-fly zone set up for the Kurds. The presence of the Hammer Force guaranteed special protection for this Kurdish zone.

This period represented the start of an enforced change of tactics on the part of the PKK, which had suffered serious losses and casualties. The north of the 36th Parallel, included in the no-fly zone and under U.S. control, represented a golden opportunity for the PKK. In this way, the PKK acquired an area in which it could be accommodated, strengthened and even trained. However, in order to be able to make use of these opportunities, it needed to do something to curry favor with the anti-communist U.S. It became essential for it to adopt a pro-American guise and to make it forgotten that it had committed terror in the name of communism. If it could succeed in that, it would enjoy the support of a superpower. And by a strange coincidence some circles in the U.S. were working, just like them, to establish a Great Kurdistan in Turkey.

For these reasons, the PKK changed its language, tactics and flag. From being a supporter of Russia and China, it suddenly became pro-American. It adopted a deceptive imperialist mask. This in fact served the interests of the American deep state apparatus, which was actually well

aware of the reality of the PKK. That deep state apparatus wanted to believe in that imperialist mask. It saw nothing wrong in using the PKK to establish a Kurdish state in the region.

These words by Öcalan, intended to curry favor with the U.S., which he had always regarded as imperialist, clearly reveal the dimensions of that mask:

This nation that was deemed forgettable and deniable by Islam, will take side mainly with Christians and Jews during Armageddon against all sectarian formations.¹⁸

The tactic was a familiar one; Öcalan criticized Islam to curry favor with the U.S., denies the presence of Kurdish people living by Islam and appears to support Christian and Jewish belief, as if he had the slightest faith or respect for any religious belief. Particularly noteworthy was his cunning emphasis on Armageddon, which Christian Evangelicals were expecting to see in Mesopotamia.

This impression was an exceptionally deceptive one. Indeed, 70 PKK camps suddenly sprung up north of the 36th Parallel, breaking away with a special administration.¹⁹ The researcher Jay Walker set out his observations in the PKK camps in a piece titled "Kurdish uprising in Turkey"; "... I have seen 20 PKK training camps by the border. In these camps, they were eating French cheese and drinking American cacao and coffee."²⁰

During this time, the PKK was reinforced especially against Iran, which the U.S. perceived as a major threat. The no-fly zone in question literally served as the PKK's private territory, in which the terror organization, previously on the brink of collapse, could re-arm, train and pull itself together.

As a result, immediately after the establishment of the Poised Hammer Force, the PKK returned stronger and re-armed for its acts of terror in Turkish territory. As a matter of fact, the 1990s in particular were when the PKK committed the most attacks and bloodshed in Turkey.

Let us make it clear that **we have no objections to the Kurds setting up their own state.** There is already an autonomous Kurdish state in the north of Iraq, and Turkey has excellent relations with it. Head of state Masoud Barzani and Prime Minister Nechervan Barzani are both sincere and devout leaders. Of course we would always wish to see countries' territorial integrity maintained, but if an independent Kurdistan is to be founded under Barzani's leadership in northern Iraq as a result of the current turmoil in that country, then of course we will support it. However, it is essential that the threat of the PKK be eliminated from the region first, and that the threat be lifted from the Barzani family in particular.

Our objection is not to the establishment of a Kurdish state, but lies in these two very important points;

- 1.) covetous eyes being cast on Turkish territory and
- 2.) the desire to realize the dream of a state of Kurdistan by means of the PKK.

Turkey is a single whole together with the Kurds. Kurds and Turks have lived together in these lands for a thousand years, and are brothers. No Kurd in Turkey has any intention of breaking away from his motherland. Neither have the Turks any intention of abandoning the Kurds. Our Kurdish brothers need not be alarmed; we are well aware that the Ergenekon terror organization that infiltrated the Turkish state, and whose members are currently on trial, for years adopted a discriminatory and repressive policy toward the Kurds. This is discussed in detail

in subsequent chapters, and the steps needing to be taken by the Turkish government and nation are also set out.

However, it should be known that it would be a grave error to blame all of Turkey for the actions of the Ergenekon terror organization. Division is something that the PKK terror organization has been talking about since the very beginning. This terror organization has absolutely nothing to do with Kurdish nationalism. On the contrary, this terror organization has always oppressed the Kurds. The idea that there is an ethnic Kurdish group in the Southeast of Turkey that wishes to break away from the country is therefore a total falsehood. It is true that the Kurds generally live in the Southeast of Turkey but there are also Kurds everywhere else in Turkey. There are also Zaza, Turkmen, Arab, Assyrian and Armenian populations in the Southeast. Turkey is therefore an integral whole with different populations all over it, and in which all its peoples are interconnected. Kurdish separatism has always been brought up by the Ergenekon and PKK criminal organizations. It appeared in the minds of mentally ill people engaged in racism. There has never been any distinction between Turks and Kurds in daily life; we would never allow it. Kurds constitute some of the jewels in the crown of Anatolia. They are important symbols of such values as friendship, honesty, spirituality, self-sacrifice and loyalty. The mindset that seeks to break our Kurdish brothers away from us will never succeed, and will always eventually end in disappointment.

Turkey will therefore never be part of the Great Kurdistan dream planned by the American deep state. The greatest mistake made by the American deep state and those of the European countries that support it is to imagine that their dream of Kurdistan can be made a reality by means of the PKK. That is a mistake because the PKK is still a Marxist organization, maybe more so than ever before. Its adoption of an imperialist mask is a cunning tactic employed by all notorious communists of the past.

Notorious communist tactics of the past

Lenin and Stalin were the bloodiest representatives of communism, and both were against religion with a very strong language, as communism requires. Lenin killed 200,000 priests for the sake of installing communism in Soviet Russia, as well as oppressing millions of Christians, destroying thousands of churches and even converting some of these into museums of atheism. Stalin followed in Lenin's footsteps and said this about religion:

*We carry on and will continue to carry on propaganda against religious prejudices. ... The Party cannot be neutral towards religion and does conduct anti-religious propaganda against all and every religious prejudice...*²¹

Astonishingly, that same Stalin who spoke of the need to employ anti-religious propaganda against all faiths also signed an accord with the Russian Orthodox Church in the first years of the Second World War. Permission was given for tens of thousands of churches to reopen and for the reconstruction of the church hierarchy. In addition, Muslim sharia was permitted in the south of the country, Buddhism was supported in the east and there was strong opposition to anti-Semitism. There was but one reason for that interesting initiative; to eliminate fascism, a

growing threat to communism in the Second World War and to gain support for the fight to defeat Hitler. Stalin made use of the influence of the Church in particular for the sake of opposing Nazism for a long time.

Lenin embarked on a short-term change of economic policy and followed capitalist principles in order to revive the Russian economy that was fast-approaching collapse and to attain the levels of prosperity in capitalist countries. Under this new system, known as the New Economic Policy (NEP), a policy was adopted that allowed small businesses to continue with the idea of making profits, just as under capitalism. The Bolsheviks regarded the NEP as a temporary move, and practices taken from capitalist economies within the NEP were criticized within the party. The NEP, which was diametrically opposed to the communist concept of economics, was adopted as a necessity and abandoned again once the requisite economic progress had been made. This tactic can be seen today in China's policies toward Hong Kong.

Another example of communists supposedly changing their stripes and taking a step backward can be seen in their attitudes toward the family and the state. As is known, communism is strongly opposed to the institutions of the family and the state and regards both as major obstacles in the fight for a return to a communal society. Nonetheless, communists generally behave tactically and say that a strong state is essential in order to eliminate the institution of the family and the family needs to be strengthened first in order to attain a strong state: They therefore take a step back and strengthen the family first. That results in the strengthening of the communist state, after which the institution of the family completely disappears. The next stage is the total elimination of the state, which is much easier for the communists in a society that no longer has any familial or religious family values.²²

The communist tactics employed by the PKK

Communist tactics have generally been implemented resolutely by communist leaders and regarded as essential to the permanent installation of communism. To put it another way, all possible means have been used for the sake of establishing a powerful communist state. It was obvious that Stalin would never support the churches and that Lenin would never allow a capitalist economy. But when circumstances so demanded, a mask was donned with the very greatest expertise.

The same tactic is now being employed by the PKK. The PKK realized that the way to establish a communist Kurdistan, the first stage in the objective of a communist world state, was to draw closer to the West. It is perfectly well aware that maintaining an explicitly communist identity will provoke a reaction from the USA, and that will inevitably end in failure for them.

The word that is constantly being reiterated in the scope of this tactical change is "autonomy". The term, which is in fact totally condemned in the Manifesto, is now employed day in and day out. Meanwhile, references in the Manifesto to the destruction of the Turkish Republic being essential for the establishment of a communist Kurdistan are glossed over; the organization is well aware of the fact that the term "communism" will never be openly supported by the West. Autonomy, however, is a highly emotive word for the USA and Europe; it also

bestows on the PKK the entirely false impression of being "an organization striving for the liberation of the Kurdish people" in the eyes of the West. It is expected that the West would consider this demand as a requisite of democracy and would certainly support it.

When efforts to familiarize the Turkish public with the word autonomy failed, endeavors turned to a policy of softening. Proposals we have been hearing frequently as of late, such as democratic autonomy, canton and democratic confederacy are discussed as a part of the tactical methods employed by the PKK.

Furthermore, although the organization is fiercely opposed to the state system and is organized around the aim of destroying the state, it has changed its language and suddenly began speaking of the Turkish Republic as a guarantor of its own existence. This is in fact the best-known of all the communist tactics. In order to eliminate the institution of state, they have put the plan of firstly being under the guarantee of a strong state, into practice. Autonomy, as the first stage of the end goal, of course requires the presence of the Turkish Republic as a guarantor. In that way it imagines that the Turkish state will serve as the main source that will provide money, arms and infrastructure for them. It plans to establish an army, with money from the Turkish state, which it can subsequently employ against it. The PKK and its supporters are for that reason constantly speaking of the importance of the existence of the state. The true purpose, however, is once it has grown stronger and become a proper state to destroy all the countries around it, including the Turkish Republic, and to continue in that way until it achieves its ultimate aim of establishing a global communist state. All this talk is therefore nothing more than a tactic.

Other tactics employed by the PKK after its adoption of an imperialist mask involves the use of women, the family and religion. Let us now look at these tactics under separate headings:

1. Women under a mask of imperialism

Until the 1990's, during the time the PKK openly carried out its Marxist- Leninist ideology, it regarded the family, religion, tribes and women as factors deleterious to its ideology. In the view of the organization, religion and the family, which it regards as the primary institutions of colonialism, had to be eradicated. That is why families, religious officials and tribes became an important area of struggle for the organization. Large numbers of religious officials were killed, and war was declared against the tribes.²³ In his first writings, Öcalan expressed serious contempt for women as the result of his Marxist-Leninist line, and even described women as elements in family that "bring men down and make them degenerate". Indeed, he never favored the presence of women inside the organization over concerns they would impair men's ability to fight and would damage the atmosphere within the organization.²⁴

At this point, having a look at Öcalan's real opinion about women, particularly Kurdish women, would be entirely appropriate:

*The bodies of the majority of Kurdish women are dead, rotten, cold and very graceless. Their physical form is a little bit like this, their souls are dull. They lack intellectuality... They are unable to repeat words not even as much as a parrot does.*²⁵

However, as we have already seen, the 1990s were a time of splits within the organization, when it was weakened and shrank in size and suffered severe losses. This important cause of a change in tactics also meant that the PKK needed to introduce a change on the subject of women. The organization issued a sudden declaration, and women began being admitted. In 1996, at a time when the organization had been shrinking and losing popular support, it first used women in suicide attacks.²⁶

The basic reason why the organization, which was staring defeat in the face, started admitting women was to use them as female fighters to encourage male terrorists. With the female fighters it brought into the forefront since that time, the PKK has opened the way to a form of rivalry, and male fighters on the point of abandoning their links to the organization have been encouraged to stay.

Indeed, the level of use of women in suicide attacks is much higher in the PKK than any other terrorist organization in the world. Women are responsible for 55% of suicide attacks carried out or caught before being carried out.²⁷ Through various deceptive means, women became the pawns of this Marxist organization.

From that time on, the PKK has made women a very vital part of its imperialist mask in a variety of different ways. It has managed to portray itself as an organization that discusses and values women's rights in the Middle East, where women are regarded as second-class citizens as a result of feudal views and a conception of Islam disseminated by peddlers of nonsense. This is a very sensitive spot for the West, and the PKK has made the most expert use of it. In the eyes of the West, it appears to be the only community that even mentions women's rights across a vast swathe of territory. This is the mask, the stratagem, of the PKK that today most deceives Western writers who are thoroughly unacquainted with the movement.

Öcalan, who in fact regards women as a degenerate, cancerous element and the main component of the nuisance that is the family, a concept which he regards as a hurdle that needs to be overcome, suddenly developed a theme of freedom for women as of the 1990s as the requisite of this tactical change. He depicted women as "a land needing to be liberated" and produced the slogan "free woman means a free Kurdistan".

The publications of the University of Illinois speak of this change within the PKK as follows:

*Until the 1990s, as women had not become active members of the PKK movement, the main focus was on men, and women were regarded as "weak people who cannot be trusted". However, as the involvement of women in the movement increased, the discourse of Öcalan as well as the PKK in general started to emphasize the role of the women while criticizing the traditional, "feudal" virility of Kurdish men.*²⁸

It needs to be made clear here that of course the freedom and superiority of women are things to be advocated, and are actually one of the fundamental elements of Islam. The Middle East is by and large very backward in that context, the main reason for this being that Islamic lands have turned away from the Qur'an in favor of superstitions. The logic of the peddlers of superstitions has led to the most extraordinary degeneracy and disaster, not just on the subject of women, but also in terms of quality, democracy, war and peace, art and science. The most important point that needs to be considered here is that true Islam is a way of thinking that exalts women and offers the most perfect description of art, science and democracy. Those who have been led to disaster have turned away from the true Islam of the Qur'an and live by a false

religion of superstition. (For more information see "Bigots' Hatred toward Women" in the book *Bigotry, the Dark Danger* by Harun Yahya)

It will also be of use to clarify the following point; it is certainly true that in those times in particular, horrifying customs such as not sending girls to school, marrying them off at an early age, regarding them as worthless and unimportant and even so-called honor killings were widespread in the Southeast of Turkey and the PKK has used this to spread the idea that "if you take up arms, then you will be free". The majority of young girls in Kurdish villages openly state that they have been deceived by this image of freedom in order to escape oppression by the family or the tribe in general. The number of those who managed to return among the ones who have regretted their decision is very small, because they have generally been threatened or even executed by the organization.

Since Turkey is both an Islamic country and a democratic one, it must lead the way on the subject of attaching value to women and must act as a perfect role model for the Middle East. It must not leave the way clear for bloody terror organizations that have donned a mask for the sole purpose of looking good to the West. It must tell the world how the most perfect, just and proper measures concerning women and democracy are to be found in the Qur'an. When this is made a reality in both the east and the west of Turkey, the way will be clear for the Middle East to escape this scourge and Turkey, as an Islamic country that puts these into action, will have shown the Middle East the true moral values displayed by the Qur'an.

What do female members of the PKK say?

The main reason for our concentration on this change of language and behavior on the subject of women on the part of the PKK is to expose the organization's hypocrisy. The PKK has adopted this talk and these policies regarding women simply because that is the easiest way of meeting its needs for militants and looking good in the eyes of the West. Yet the words of women inside the organization in fact reveal the very opposite of this.

Necati Alkan has interviewed a large number of female PKK members and has produced an important collection of these. Some of these read as follows:

The female PKK member code-named Zelal says:

I criticized Öcalan for his attitudes and policies. I criticized the organization's internal democracy and people's backwardness... They put me in jail for two months. When I came out, Öcalan accused me of speaking against him, in the presence of 500 people in a training area and said 'One has no right to say anything against a deity. If you speak against a deity, you will be struck down.' In other words, he ascribed divine status to himself. I wanted to leave the organization, but they threatened me with death. I had never been so terrified in my life.²⁹

The woman code-named Bese, who was active in the PKK during this time of transition, says:

When I joined the PKK I was up in the mountains. I had a gun, so I thought I was free. But as time passed, I realized this was not freedom. Because I had no identity of my own. I could not freely express my ideas or criticisms. When I wanted to leave the organization, I was not able to do so. (2008)³⁰

The woman code-named Leyla says:

Very little was done in the name of women's freedom within the PKK apart from symbolic and very superficial things. And what was done in fact damaged women's freedom a bit more. Because it was Öcalan, a man, who developed an ideology on behalf of women, organized them and took and implemented all decisions. I was personally free before joining the PKK. But in the PKK I had and could have no opinions regarding today or tomorrow." (2009)³¹

Necati Alkan said the following in his book on the basis of his observations and interviews:

*Women given various tasks and roles by the PKK after the 1990s became the main force keeping the organization on its feet. All the women interviewed stated that if that force were to quit the organization, "its organizational structure would collapse". Ronahi's words stating that, "were there no women you could not keep the men in the organization", Beritan's statement saying that "the men stay up in the mountains for the women", Revşen's opinion stating that "if women left the organization nobody would stay up in the mountains" and Pelin's words saying that, "If the women left, the men would not stay up in the mountains for a second" are all significant in that context.*³²

Alkan's analyses suggest that women, regarded by the PKK as "slaves to be freed" in the early years, began being regarded as "comrades" in the 1990s when they started taking part in armed attacks and as "goddesses" after 1996, when they started taking part in suicide attacks. It appears that, despite all the talk in their praise, in practice, women in the organization were despised by the men, not regarded as equals and not valued. Many women concerned by the difference between the organization's words and actions and who saw the discrepancy between its promises and deeds, sought to leave the organization during this period. Some fled, but others were caught trying to escape and declared to be traitors and punished.³³

This statement by Neval, who spent many years in the PKK, is particularly significant:

*All measures in the name of women's freedom inside the PKK were introduced as the most basic dynamic of the PKK system. One of the main elements of the system that Öcalan wished to create was female activity. Note that throughout the history of the party, and particularly after 1990, Öcalan based his system and identity on the power of women to a significant extent. **While putting women in the balance, he actually benefitted from that more than women did.** (...) Thousands of Kurdish women who took to the mountains and suffered numerous hardships in the name of the revolution and freedom, for their country's sake, were organized **for the interests of Öcalan's system** but in the name of "liberty".*

*People speak of Öcalan being on the side of women. I would like to clarify that: Apart from a few gestures required as the prestige of being the Leader, it is not possible to speak of Öcalan generally favoring women. But there is an even worse and unjust system concealed behind this. What Öcalan actually established was an elite female group that could act as his mouthpiece and reinforce his own control through women.*³⁴

The punishment and execution of women engaging in criticism inside the organization, or wishing to leave it, is a fact that summarizes the reality of women in the PKK. The most important example of this was the execution, at Öcalan's command, of the female militant code-

named Semir who sent her criticisms of internal organization within the party to Öcalan himself. According to Necati Alkan, through the execution of Semir, Öcalan neutralized the first direct revolt against his authority and issued a challenge to future potential opposition movements in the person of Semir. Semir was not the only example. Saime Aşkın, who supported Semir during the dispute, was also killed. This policy is still in force today, and those who criticize Öcalan's practices are identified as those who carry the "personality of Semir" and are subjected to similar punishments and executions.³⁵ The reality of the terrible executions within the PKK will be described in detail in due course.

It is of course no surprise that, despite all the deceptive talk about women, female members of the PKK have realized that they were in fact "only there to be used". Women have always been regarded as valueless entities in communist systems. Moreover, there is no question of any value being attached to women in the communal system believed to have existed once, but which in reality never did. Under the desired communal system, women are regarded as communal property, in the same way as all goods and objects, food and children. Since communist ideology is an unpopular one, particularly in the present day, they do not openly talk about communal use of women. However, this is the inevitable consequence of the elimination of the institution of the family, and this is the actual objective. A concept of society in which neither marriage nor the family have any meaning inevitably implies the common use of women, children and material properties. In a society in which everything is regarded as property to be enjoyed communally, women will obviously have no unique "value".

2. Religion under the mask of imperialism

(Surely God and the Qur'an are beyond what stated below)

Perhaps the most important of the elements in the PKK's imperialist mask is religion. Until the 1990s, the Leninist PKK entirely rejected religion. After that, however, it began using religion as one of the most important ways of concealing its communist identity. The key point in making a good impression on Western states was to adopt a different policy toward religion, to which communism is fiercely opposed. The PKK began using a mask of religious devotion in a particularly effective manner after the 1990s.

Before turning to the details of this change, we need to understand the PKK's basic attitude toward religion.

As we have reiterated several times, the PKK is a communist organization and communism appeared together with the ideology of atheism, and all communist leaders have in fact engaged in atheist propaganda. The communist state of the future must have abandoned the concepts of religion, ethics and the family. Öcalan, who said, "*What Lenin was to socialism in 1900s, I am in the 21st Century*", openly expressed his ideas on the subject of religion prior to the 1990s, before he donned an imperialist mask, in other words. Some perverse statements about religion from Abdullah Öcalan read as follows (surely God and the Qur'an are beyond this):

- *I went through a serious philosophical depression in high school. I declared war on **God and became semi-divine when I emerged victorious from that war.***³⁶

- Monotheistic religious ideologies are political ideologies from start to finish. Concepts such as religious speech, God, prophets and angels are **the political literature of the time**.³⁷

- God is a kind of **medieval feudal manifesto**, its basic law and declaration.³⁸

- Prayer itself is in general terms a piece of theater.³⁹

- Regarding the Holy Qur'an: "The third great version of the Sumerian mythology carried out at the ideological identity level, one that has undergone a transformation."

- **We have nothing to do with religion. Our people must break away from God and ideology. I broke away from God after a long struggle. I overcame God. And was thus able to become Abdullah Öcalan. Islam has given our women nothing. We will replace it with socialist morality.**

- When we look at progress in history, we see quite clearly that they sought unity and power through the worship of God. Concepts such **as the beloved servant going to paradise are the fantastical elements of the matter, the literary bits.**

Leninism has been the ideology of Öcalan and the PKK right from the beginning. Lenin described the perspective toward religion in the Marxist ideology that he practiced as follows:

*Marxism is materialism... This is beyond doubt. **We must combat religion.** That is the ABC of all materialism, and consequently of Marxism. But Marxism is not materialism, which has stopped at the ABC. Marxism goes further. It says: "**We must know how to combat religion, and in order to do so we must explain the source of faith and religion among the masses in a materialist way. The combatting of religion cannot be confined to abstract ideological preaching**".⁴⁰*

Marx described religion as a tool in the hands of the ruling class used to lull the people into compliance; it was referred to by Marx as "the opiate of the masses". Öcalan adopted the same view of religion in the light of the ideology he followed, regarding religion as a tool of the bourgeois and the state, which he regarded as a colonialist power. Indeed, the founding manifesto of the organization refers to Islam as an agent of colonialism and as a Trojan Horse installed among the Kurds with a covert influence over them. The metaphor of the Trojan Horse appears as follows in Öcalan's own words on page 32 of the 1994 edition of the "Manifesto of the Kurdish Revolution":

The Kurds have been subjected to foreign colonization in the spiritual sense as well. Islam is like a "Trojan Horse" whose role is to prepare for national denial in the heart and brain of the Kurd and to conquer the citadel from the inside.⁴¹

As a result of its Leninist perspective, the PKK's main idea was to establish a system under the dictatorship of the proletariat, and believed that the dictatorship of the proletariat could primarily be possible by the spread of irreligion. These words of Öcalan's need to be borne in mind in this context, "*The Kurdistan Revolution is part of a Revolution of the World Proletariat that began with the October Revolution and is becoming increasingly strengthened through the national liberation movement*".⁴² The primary method of imposing the hegemony of the proletariat for the PKK is without doubt through armed struggle but the first condition for this

mentality to install itself within the PKK has always been regarded as an education intended to turn people away from religion. These words of Öcalan's make this very clear:

*[The] Proletariat could neither be able to realize a strong movement nor come up with a pioneering organization before the formation of dialectic historical-materialism. It is no coincidence that the great masters of proletariat have **started this task from philosophy and brought forth the sturdy point of view of the proletariat by criticizing religion...***⁴³

As all these statements show, both Lenin and his follower Öcalan failed to comprehend the beauty and warm spirit of religion and the moral values that God speaks of, for which reason they always imagined that the primary solution was to declare war against religion. The basic method employed by the PKK has therefore always been to provide a false philosophical education. That philosophical education is based on dialectical materialism, and along with that, contains an anti-religious discourse. This form of education is still employed within the PKK today.

Yet this is a waste of effort in the Southeast. Our people living in the Southeast of Turkey have fully grasped the warm and loving spirit of Islam. They are a strong people who embody the Islamic spirit of peace, affection and altruism to perfection. It is impossible for the people of the Southeast to adopt any other way of life than Islam or to abide by such a cold, terrifying and loveless way of life as Marxism. In fact, the PKK had to admit two very important facts in the early 1990s, when it began suffering serious losses: 1.) The Kurds are a religious people, and will therefore never support any irreligious ideology unless they are compelled to do so and 2.) the way to win the support of the West in the Middle East, wracked as it is by radicalism, is through talk of moderate Islam.

Journalist and writer Mehmet Metiner says the following in the context of this first fact:

*I maintain that at that time (the years of its foundation), had the PKK not followed a socialist-atheist ideological line and had it not adopted a policy that directly reckons with the Kurds' religious beliefs and values, there is no doubt that it would have had the opportunity to attract a far greater number of people... Because the Kurds have never, throughout the course of their history, renounced their faith or their national identity.*⁴⁴

The fact that the Kurds would never abandon their faith obliged the PKK, which was unable to attract support, to adopt a religious guise.

The second point is that either the PKK really had the effect it desired in the West, or else the West wanted to believe this out of self-interest. Some Western commentators point to the Middle East becoming a bloodbath because of radicalism as the reason for that and regard PKK an ally that speaks of religion in moderate terms – either unaware that it is a communist organization or else totally ignoring that fact – as being highly suited to their own norms. Indeed, the French writer Bernard-Henri Levy makes this very clear in his own statements concerning the PKK: "**... one finds a level of gender equality, a respect for secularism and minorities, and a modern, moderate, and ecumenical conception of Islam** that are, to say the least, rare in the region."⁴⁵

Note that the three factors cited, women's rights, democracy and a moderate concept of religion, are things that the West has always wanted to see in the Middle East. These key and

misleading factors have been carefully selected and used by the PKK as part of a tactical change. The West, on the other hand, fondly imagines that it has gained an ally with just those characteristics in a region of great strategic importance, one that it can make excellent use of. The fact is, however, that the PKK is simply deceiving the West.

A religious mask well suited to an appearance of Kurdish nationalism

After the 1990s, the PKK changed its spots and began constantly speaking of "ethnic movements", "local elements" and "crisis of identity oppressed under a majority". The reason for that is that these factors have a permanent presence on the EU and U.S. human rights agenda. That is why the PKK is playing the Kurdish card. And in order to play that card right, they decided to use Islam – in their own twisted minds- which the Kurdish people are identified with. The fact is, however, that the PKK is a communist organization that has nothing to do with Kurdish nationalism. Indeed, it is always the Kurds that have been targeted by the organization, and organization carried out the real slaughter on the Kurds. As this book reiterates from time to time, it is important to properly distinguish between the PKK and the Kurds.

Burhan Semiz describes this change of guise in the PKK in order to better approach the local people as follows:

*Religion, and specifically Islam, heads the list of the superstructural institutions that the PKK rejects, either directly or indirectly, depending on the circumstances, and that it regards as inimical. The PKK, identifying religion and Islam as an agent of colonialism, exhibited a hostile attitude to these values of society before and after its foundation...⁴⁶ The PKK began realizing the importance of bearing societal values in mind, as of the early 1990s and in order to avoid a clash of values with the local people of the region, **it adopted a new language concerning the family, women and cultural values, and particularly Islamic-religious values.**⁴⁷ The PKK's failure to attract the desired level of grass root support in an organizational context, and the Kurds opposing the organization by tending to support other groups, such as Ilim, Menzil and Hizbollah, **caused Öcalan to revise his classic language concerning Islam and religion in the 1990s and led to greater importance being attached to the subject.**⁴⁸*

Within this new guise, Öcalan explicitly stated that he could even regard radical religious movements as allies.

*Friendship with opponents of the established order, especially religious movements, is desirable. A friendly approach to religious ideological movements based on Iran can be adopted. **These should not be regarded as enemies, because they seek to overthrow pro-Western regimes by following a radical line.** We must be in a state of competition and solidarity with them, particularly as we implement our own religious policy.⁴⁹*

Öcalan sought to implement this change of language within the principle of gradual familiarization without an instantaneous and complete diversion from materialist elements. He sought to implement this through a strategy he dubbed "The Revolutionary Approach to the Problem of Religion". Öcalan attempted to express his attitude toward religion in various forms,

and began adopting a more moderate language in terms of Islam. Instead of his earlier language which completely excluded religion, he began concentrating on the social functions of religion, while still preserving his dialectical and materialist views.

This change of tactic has been included much more widely in general statements by the PKK in recent years. Various politicians and actors known for their religious natures have been employed, and the PKK has gradually began being associated with the concept of "moderate Islam", in such a way as to influence the West. As a result of this false representation, the West imagined that it now had a group that would be effective against the growing numbers of radicals in the Middle East. The reality is very different, however. The PKK's policy of drawing closer to Islam is merely tactical, as described by a former member of the organization, Demirkiran:

The day after I joined the organization I realized that it has no religious belief. Because, it had a Marxist-Leninist structuring. That really saddened me at first and caused me to be distressed for a long while. Yet they still tried to relieve me of my faith, as well. There was no question of my not rejecting religious belief when everyone else was doing so. Although I did not deny the faith internally, it was not possible to externalize my faith. Surely all of us were irreligious.⁵⁰

These comments concerning Hüseyin, a member of the organization aged in his mid-to-late 50's who had been an imam before joining the PKK for various reasons, are also noteworthy:

When Uncle Hüseyin first came to the camp he was performing his prayers as well. Then he saw that nobody else was praying, and that moreover everyone was against religion, and he gradually ceased praying. He explained this by saying, "Now we are at war. We can pray later". This is how an imam became estranged to his religion in the PKK, which was funded on Marxist theory. Other people, like us, had already long since forgotten God.⁵¹

The PKK, which has adopted a mask of religion in order to deceive our Kurdish brothers and the West, still dreams of establishing an atheistic, communal system from which the state and the family have been eliminated. Indeed, as we shall be seeing in detail in due course, the KCK state system established by the PKK under the rubric of urban organization exactly meets that communal description, and openly expresses it. For that reason, it is astonishing that the PKK's religious talk is so deceiving to the West and even for some circles inside Turkey. These people describe a community that wishes to destroy all forms of religion as "moderately devout" and as a model for a Middle East, a region molded by religion.

The Turkish education curriculum unwittingly supports the ideology of the PKK

The point requiring attention here, and the most worrying thing in terms of the Turkish state and nation, is that the Turkish education curriculum unwittingly supports the ideology of the PKK. As we have already seen, communism, the basic ideology of the PKK, derives from Darwinism and Darwinism, or the theory of evolution, is the worst deception in the history of mankind, imposed by force on educational curricula across the world by a cunning dictatorship. That deception has particularly been exposed by 21st Century science. More than 500 million fossils show that living things have remained unchanged for millions of years. Molecular and biological

evidence has revealed that no protein can ever come into being by chance. Consequently the theory of evolution is invalid in the scientific sense. Yet thanks to pressure and deterrent policies from the Darwinist dictatorship, state systems have come to adopt this deception and made the theory of evolution a fundamental compulsory subject in schools and universities. The mainstream media also instruct their own broadcasting and publishing bodies accordingly.

Turkey is one of these countries. Although 99% of Turkish people are religiously devout, evolution plays a primary role in the Turkish educational curriculum, as it does in all other countries. Our children are taught evolution from a very early age, as if it were something that had actually happened. They believe that the world is a battleground where the strong vanquish the weak, and the subconscious idea that everything comes into being by chance turns them away from belief in God. Religious knowledge based on a traditional approach is taught in religious studies classes in schools. However, children are also inculcated with the false idea that God does not exist in all their other classes (surely God is beyond that). Therefore, under the effects of this false infrastructure, a child can very easily later be influenced by ideologies based on Darwinism, such as communism and fascism. Even if he does not fall under their spell, he will still lack the strength and ideological equipment with which to oppose these false ideologies. It is for these reasons that while the PKK provides Darwinist/communist education for its own people, the young Turks who should be striving against that are amazingly given a very similar education in public schools. One tragic consequence of this is that they are unable to wage any intellectual struggle against the PKK. The fight against the PKK is limited to the military arena, and ends in casualties because of the guerrilla war the PKK perfidiously conducts.

However, as we have said so many times over the years, the only way of fighting the PKK is on an intellectual basis. So long as that does not happen it will be absolutely impossible to completely eradicate the PKK. Negotiations and ceasefires will obviously fail to achieve results, because the killers will still be there, just simply deprived of their weapons for a short time.

In order to give a better understanding of the Darwinist infrastructure of the PKK, it should be stated that Öcalan himself is a fanatical evolutionist and the ideological foundations of the PKK lie in that deception. (For more detail, see "The PKK is Darwinist" section in the book *The Danger of a Communist Kurdistan* by Harun Yahya, p. 111). Indeed, in giving his own foolish definition of religion, Öcalan speaks of an imaginary time in which he believes "man started becoming human". This is a reference to the false idea of a transition from primates to human beings in Öcalan's mind. The words that Öcalan uses are these:

Under the conditions in which the human species came into being, during the time they started to become human as a species, when they started to use their capabilities which gave them these attributes, they had to come up with a religious value, a religious thought, a religious way of thinking. They had to do this with two reasons, on the one hand there were natural forces they regarded as supernatural and on the other hand they had their own capabilities in question.⁵²

As can be seen, Öcalan, in his own mind, identifies a time when humans started becoming human and claims that the notion of religion was developed by man under the influence and fear of supernatural events. This idea can also be seen in other statements of his:

... Let us have a look at humans and consider their weakness against nature while trying to understand religion. With what will he overcome this weakness, this nakedness of his? I

*believe that we are not mistaken in this point: **Humans, in order to make themselves ruling, in order to get rid of their helplessness, in order to appear sympathetic towards nature and to render nature understanding and of course above all else in order to make themselves sovereign, appeal to the notions of religion and God.** As a matter of fact, people have their eyes on being "sovereign". As a prerequisite of this, they create gods for themselves... If we were to materialize it even further, religion is the first form of thought and psychological development in the confrontation of human species with nature.*⁵³

This is in fact a new tactic on the part of Öcalan, who until then had rejected religion entirely. He still speaks as an atheist and still backs the PKK's atheistic strategy, but also seeks to give the impression that religion is "an acceptable institution" by claiming it was a need felt by the earliest humans. He is actually using a means of fighting religion described by Lenin in the words, "**... We must explain the origins of faith and religion to the masses from a materialist perspective.**" He adopts a guise that seeks to account for religion in sociological terms but that does not reject it completely, and thus seeks to influence the devout Kurdish people.

Another passage from Öcalan on the subject reads:

***Religion is a remedy for humans to overcome all weaknesses and to eliminate their fears, concerns and pains.** And it is necessary. It is not possible to say why did the first man not reach the scientific facts, why did he fall into errors and obsessions. That is because it was not possible to act any different under the conditions of that day. In that case, a better understanding of the truth of the first man is necessary.*⁵⁴

As this makes very clear, Öcalan seeks to impose the false notion of evolution on religion, which claims that nature and history evolved within a dialectic course and maintains that religion does exist within that dialectic course. Accordingly, he accounts for religion as a need stemming from fears and claims that it also evolved over the course of time. Öcalan foolishly espouses the horrifying logic which states that, "*a perception of religion within the axis of God and nature ruled in the primitive communal society and with tie transformation to feudal society, the concept of religion started to be evolved and created the social foundation for monotheistic religions.*"⁵⁵

It is not surprising that these ideas should have an effect on some segments of society. The curriculum in Turkish schools describes religion in these terms in sociology classes:

*In general terms, religion is a way of accounting for natural and societal events that people could not understand and which they were powerless in the face of, in terms of supernatural and mysterious forces invented by themselves.*⁵⁶

It is a horrifying state of affairs that religion, sent down by our Almighty Lord as a guide to the truth and the right path from His Own Presence, should be described in our own schools as a concept "invented by people" to cope with fears caused by natural and social events. This state of affairs not only serves the interests of the PKK, but also lays the foundation for the production of atheistic communities. Lovelessness, violence and hatred will clearly enjoy free rein in societies that have no fear of God and instead believe that a struggle in nature where the strong vanquish the weak is essential. Indeed, it is no surprise that the numbers of savage killings, the murders of women, daily brawls and psychopaths are increasing all the time. Due to classes

being based on evolution, students are directly indoctrinated in school with the idea that "God does not exist" (surely God is beyond that) and come to regard violence as a law of nature. So long as they have no fear of God, neither laws nor deterrent sanctions can stop people with a tendency to violence.

Some of the expression that appear in philosophy text books in the Turkish school curriculum read as follows:

...Man is free and strong. He has no essence predetermined by God... He is an existential entity that does not come from nothing. Because there is nothing outside him. If God existed, there would be no existence and freedom. Therefore...

...If God wishes to prevent evil in the world but is unable to do so, then He is weak. If God is able to prevent evil but does not wish to do so, then He is ill-intentioned...⁵⁷ (Surely God is beyond that)

These terrifying words are used to subconsciously indoctrinate people into denying the existence of God. A child reading these words will believe that they represent information from an academic source and will grow up as an atheist. The truth of the matter is that God is Infinite and Eternal, and the universe came into being by His leave; the universe and everything in it have a beginning and an end. The fact that the universe, man and all living things were created has been proved by countless branches of science, including genetics, astronomy, physics, quantum physics, biology and paleontology. The existence of God is a guarantee of freedom, justice, happiness and peace. True evil and unhappiness are the features of an illusory world that evolutionists and materials believe came into being by chance and advances in a state of conflict.

Statements about the dialectic of history and nature from the past to the present day are in fact false philosophies fabricated in order to spread the fraud of evolution across the world. Nothing in history or nature has ever developed from the primitive to the more advanced. No such thing as the "Stone Age" ever happened in the course of history, and living things did not descended from a bacterium. Some societies in the past were extraordinary civilizations far more advanced than some today. (For more detail, see *The Evolution Deceit* by Harun Yahya, and, *A Historical Lie; The Stone Age* by Harun Yahya) Therefore, the dialectic that Öcalan and all other Darwinists seek to impose to religion is merely a deception. Yet that deception is shamelessly being taught in middle school textbooks, as we have seen.

As we have seen, the PKK terrorists are led astray up in the mountains, and our students in their schools. It will be very difficult for there to be an intellectual struggle against the PKK and its ideology within Turkey's borders until that deception is brought to an end. As we have made clear many times, the real problem that needs to be dealt with is the PKK's horrendous ideology. The absence of any infrastructure for an ideological struggle, and young people being deprived of any such infrastructure and raised as the prisoners of a vast deception, might result in terrible tragedy for Turkey.

Some Examples of Evolutionary and Atheist Propaganda in School Text Books (According to the 2013-14 curriculum)

Middle School 12th-year Biology Text Book

*In this academic year you will learn about how life first appeared and about the changes in life forms in the chapter "**THE BEGINNING OF LIFE AND EVOLUTION**"*

*Fossils provide us clues about how living beings appeared on earth, where and how they spread throughout the world and what kind of changes they have gone through while they spread out. Information obtained from fossils and several branches of science is used to study the origin of life **and evolution**. (p. 199)*

*All changes undergone by life forms from their initial states to the emergence of present-day diversity **are described as evolution**. (p. 204)*

*As a result of the paleontological studies conducted, it has been observed that there are fossils different from each other among these layers and that the more the age of these layers increased, the **less the fossils resembled to today's living beings**. The results attained with the survey of fossils, reveal **that some species that lived millions of years ago have undergone change in time or have gone extinct**. (p.204)*

*Therefore, determining **the evolutionary process undergone by a species** is based on the observation of similarities between species and examination of fossils exhibiting such similarities. (p. 205)*

Unit headings:

Lamarck's Views (p. 205)

Darwin's Views (p. 206)

Fossils are the most powerful evidence for evolution. (p. 207)

Fossils enable the comparison of the similarities and differences between the living species that lived in ancient ages and today and show us what kinds of changes species have undergone. (p. 207)

Evolutionary Relations in Similarities and Differences in Living Things'
Embryological, Biochemical, Anatomical and Genetic Structures (pp. 208-209)

*How Do Changes in Nature **Affect Evolution?** (p. 210)*

1. What are the contributions of embryology, genetics and biochemistry in **explaining evolution?**

2. How do fossils contribute to **understanding evolution?**

4. What problems do changes in living things taking place gradually in long terms according to **the theory of evolution** cause for biologists conducting research on this?

5. What are the adverse effects that occur as a result of the increase in the human population? **How do these affect the evolutionary process and life?** (p. 211)

Middle School 9th-year Biology Text Book

Primitive eukaryote... From **unicellular to multicellular...** Volvox that is regarded as the **transitional form**, from **unicellular to multicellular...** (p.91)

However, **life began in the seas** and only recently (in geological terms, some 500 million years ago) moved onto the land. (p. 107)

Primary School Science and Technology Text Book 6th-year

The **evolution of the horse** (p. 232)

The **ancestor of the horse** was an animal with five toes and about the size of a dog. (p. 232)

Middle School 10th-year Biology Text Book

This is an **evolutionary adaptation** developed for survival under different underwater conditions. (p. 150)

Evolutionary adaptation permits genetic diversity in a population. (p. 18)

The answer to this question can be found by looking at the **evolution of amphibians, birds and mammals**. (p. 47)

When these groups began diversifying **in the evolutionary process...** (p. 47)

Since they never caught malaria **throughout their evolutionary processes...** (p. 126)

Primary School 8th-year Science and Technology Text Book

Adaptation and evolution: ... Adaptations are a sign **of the process of evolution** in the emergence of biological diversity. **Give examples of the contributions made by adaptations to biological diversity and evolution.** (pp. 38-40)

We have given examples of how adaptations by living things in the face of environmental changes contribute to biological diversity and **evolution**. (p. 42)

Middle School Psychology Text Book

Zoology: Investigates embryological development, feeding, health, behavior, inheritance and **evolution** in animals, and interaction and communication with other animals. (p. 27)

Fine Arts and Sports High Schools 12th-year Museum Education

The determination of unknown points of human evolution, and particularly caves containing fossil remains from our remote ancestors, personal goods, footprints, animal bones, jugs, bowls and ceramics make wide archeological and anthropological investigation possible. (p. 56)

Art is a phenomenon that has existed in all periods of human history. ***The evolution undergone by mankind has changed people's life-styles and views...*** (p. 58)

Middle School Astronomy and Space Sciences Text Book

Content:

The Evolution of the Stars, The Stages of Stellar Evolution (p. 63)

In this section we shall be looking at the evolution and important stages of a star. (p. 63)

Philosophy Text Book (Surely God is beyond this)

...man is free and strong. He has no essence previously determined by God... he is an existential entity, he does not come from nothing. Because there is nothing outside him. If God existed, there could be no coming into being or freedom. Therefore... (p. 171)

...If God wishes to prevent evils in the world but cannot, then He is weak. If God is powerful enough to prevent evils in the world but does not wish to, then He is ill-intentioned... (p. 171)

Sociology Text Book (Surely God is beyond this)

Generally, religion means people's attempts to explain natural and social phenomena which they cannot understand and are powerless in the face of in terms of mysterious, supernatural forces of their own invention. (p. 96)

3. Concepts of democracy and the institution of the state under the mask of imperialism

Following attacks on Eruh and Şemdinli on August 15th, 1984, the PKK, whose declared aim was the establishment of an "Independent United Socialist Kurdistan", officially announced its intention to remove the Turkish Army from the whole of the Southeastern Turkey. It maintained that aim until the early 1990s, and Öcalan announced that they would have an army numbering 50,000.⁵⁸

One of the principle aims in the PKK's founding manifesto is the creation of a classless society, and it contains a call to arms to build a communist Kurdistan. As stated previously, the

section of the PKK program titled "The Duties of the Kurdistan Revolution", contains an article verbalizing the rejection of all proposals for a solution (such as regional autonomy) that might be suggested by the Republic of Turkey, described as a colonialist state. The aim behind that rejection is the idea which states that Turkey, regarded as a colonialist state, should definitely be broken up.⁵⁹

As the purpose behind its foundations demands, the PKK has therefore never sought a democratic solution. The communist ideology is based not on obtaining land or rights through negotiation under a democratic framework, but on achieving them directly through armed struggle. In such a way of thinking, in which the structure of the state is rejected and everything belonging to the state is considered the enemy, anarchy is seen as the sole legitimate method, and even the killing of innocent people in the name of changing the existing order is seen as perfectly normal. Democracy is therefore a totally unacceptable concept to all communist terror organizations.

The PKK openly states in its Manifesto that it intends to destroy that Turkish state through a Maoist-inspired war. The organization knows no methods other than terror, and has explicitly declared war on democracy and the state, as required under communism. However, it has gradually begun adopting a different language, as a result of its imperialist mask. The idea of demolishing the Republic of Turkey with an army of 50,000 has gradually been amended through a series of maneuvers and there is now talk of the absolute existence of the Republic of Turkey.

The main reasons for this are as follows:

- Despite adopting the tactic of a cowardly guerrilla war, the PKK has consistently suffered major losses at the hands of the Turkish military, and thus finds it difficult to recruit supporters.
- Öcalan's words stating that "I'm at the disposal of the state" immediately after his arrest is in fact a clear expression of that forced change. Öcalan spoke directly to the state and issued statements to the effect that there would be negotiations with the state, and he reiterated these during his trial. It is obvious that Öcalan's capture and the events that took place subsequently are part of a comprehensive and secret plan on the part of the Western deep state apparatus in the name of its aim of establishing a Great Kurdistan. As a part of this plan that was set out beforehand, Öcalan changed his language as determined by the West and came to reluctantly recognize the existence of the Turkish state.
- This imperialist policy, which began when the armed struggle failed to produce results, gradually turned into an endeavor to slyly take over the whole of the Southeastern Turkey. It started with the idea of first forcing the Turkish government to the negotiating table. In order to do that, it began concentrating on democratic talk instead of Marxist slogans that would only create an allergic reaction.
- BDP/HDP leaders who reacted negatively to the very word "democracy" before suddenly became its greatest supporters. Indeed, what Sırrı Süreyya Önder said during a television show is particularly noteworthy – *"The PKK is a very democratic organization. These words may astonish many viewers, but that is the truth"*.⁶⁰ To describe a terror organization that has been waging a cowardly guerrilla war for the last 40 years and has ridden roughshod over the principles of democracy by slaughtering people, making no allowances for women and children, as democratic, clearly reveals the kind of stratagem being played out.

- The PKK is certainly well aware that talk of democracy will attract powerful support from the U.S. and the EU in particular. And that is just what is happening. Certain naïve Westerners who describe the PKK terror in Turkey as "a Kurdish movement undergoing a crisis of identity" are immediately taken in by this talk of democracy and entirely forget the reality of the terror in Turkey instantly under the influence of that spell. The PKK is making masterly use of this sensitivity of the Western world.

The organization that has begun repeating the word democracy so often also changed its name to Kongra-Gel as of November 2003 for all these reasons and described its subsequent objective as one of "building a democratic, ecological society in which democracy directly prevails, without seeking to found a separate state, for the resolution of the Kurdish problem".⁶¹ As a manifestation of that, the objective has moved from an independent Kurdistan to cantons, and from cantons to talk of democratic autonomy and now a Kurdistan within the territory of the Republic of Turkey is being discussed.

The fact is, however, that the aim here has never been democracy or democratic autonomy within a democratic country: The objective is to use democracy to get the inside track. It is to use local administrations to seize control of the Southeast, which they have been unable to break away by armed force, while at the same time espousing the integrity of the Republic of Turkey and also enjoying revenues from the Republic of Turkey and benefitting from its army, educational system and resources and thus grow stronger and be able to act on its own. In order to bring that about, it of course suits their interests to be under the protection of an existing and powerful state. They plan to use the Turkish army to establish local control for themselves. In doing all this, they will have no objection to the Turkish flag flying in a corner for a short period of time.

Since doing all this while talking of Kurdistan alone would stick out enormously, they have developed a new tactic and now plan to divide Turkey into 25 or 26 autonomous regions; this is the plan that the PKK and the political parties enjoying the support of Öcalan and the PKK, such as the HDP, have been making frequent reference to of late. The plan envisages every region becoming autonomous, and this will divert attention from the emergence of an autonomous Kurdistan.

This entire plan can be clearly seen in a speech given by Osman Baydemir, former mayor of Diyarbakır, in 2010:

*What form will a democratic, prosperous Turkey take? There will be an autonomous Eastern Black Sea region, and autonomous Central Black Sea region, and also an autonomous Kurdistan... The Turkish Parliament exists and will continue to exist within this project of democratic autonomy. **There is no objection to that. The Turkish flag will continue to fly in Turkey, and we have no objection to that, either.** However, there will be an autonomous parliament in each region. One of these regional parliaments will be the **Kurdistan Regional Parliament**. In addition to the Turkish flag, for which my forebears and all our forebears sacrificed their blood and which is now flying, the local colors and flag will also be flying in the sky. **Where is the harm in our yellow, red and green flag flying alongside the Turkish flag outside our municipal building?***⁶²
(Milliyet, 01.08.2010)

We also need to point out the means of persuasion employed in these statements. Baydemir, in his own mind, "permits" the continued existence of the Turkish Parliament and Turkish flag, and thus supposedly reveals his good intentions. This form of reckless language has recently been adopted by almost all senior HDP figures, who say "there is no harm in the Turkish flag - which actually is an expression of the indivisibility of our motherland- flying in a corner somewhere".

It also needs to be made clear that some BDP-HDP representatives, including Osman Baydemir, may indeed be speaking in this way with no ulterior motives, or else under pressure. Yet when it comes to the aims of the PKK, the idea underlying all the talk of democratic autonomy, and cantons is the planned Kurdish state in the Southeast. The aim is also to use the wealth, means and troops of the Turkish state to make that plan a reality. Indeed, the fact that the PKK was until quite recently in "negotiations" with the Turkish state was intended to obtain by cunning stratagem what it has failed to obtain through its guerrilla campaign. This will be examined in more detail in due course.

Chapter 4

The Perception of the PKK in the West

While the PKK is attempting to ingratiate itself with the West by changing their appearance and statements, it is perhaps natural that a mistaken perception regarding the PKK was swift to develop in the West. The USA, who was in a merciless struggle against communism for years, who has been in a high stakes Cold War with the Soviet Union and fought in Vietnam and Korea to this end, and the Western Powers who supported the US, have included the PKK in the list of terrorist organization because of its communist, terrorist identity. Nevertheless, it is of course a known fact that the PKK was supported by some of the European states for years and that it was quite well organized in those countries. This foreign support the organization enjoyed is certainly one of the most important reasons why the organization could not have been annihilated despite the struggle that has been going on against it for decades. Thus, the PKK was able to find an environment abroad to carry out some of their activities they could not do within Turkey. They could easily disseminate the propaganda of the organization through various television and radio channels, have the articles of the executives of the organization published in various periodicals and were able to create financial sources through front companies. The efforts of Marxist parties, associations and institutions abroad in this regard were significant.

But still, albeit on paper, the USA in particular and other anti-communist countries largely stood against the Marxist identity of the PKK. As we have previously stated, this opposition in the Western countries did not serve the PKK's purpose in time and the change in appearance and statements within the PKK started to manifest themselves after this. Indeed, the mask of Westernism, which mainly targeted to get into the good graces of the USA, substantially opened previously obstructed paths for the PKK. It is not surprising that now some people appeared among writers from the US and Europe who are reckless enough to openly suggest "taking the PKK off the list of terrorist organizations."

The question that should be asked here is the following: Did the USA really believe in this mask?

Among the government and the deep state of the USA there might be some who really believed in this mask, yet in actual fact this mask served the purposes of many. So much so, that it is highly probable that this deep state might have a role in this change in identity.

Consequently, especially while evaluating the Western point of view towards the PKK, this evaluation should be made in two different aspects:

- 1) Those who want to use the PKK and;
- 2) Those who fell into the trap of the PKK.

Those who want to use the PKK

Some segments of the Western deep state known as hawks are well aware of all the actors in the Middle East and their development strategies and their targets. These people we have mentioned in the beginning of this book particularly constitute a certain portion of the Evangelical neo-conservative wing and are certainly aware of the fact that the PKK did not essentially break away from its Marxist roots. They are well aware of the fact that the goal of this organization is to become a communist world state starting with the Communist Kurdistan that they are trying to create on the lands of four countries; they are merely putting on a show for the USA within the scope of this goal. They also know that by congregating with all the communist countries and organizations, the PKK actually is of the opinion of annihilating imperialism. Despite this fact, the US is using the PKK to create a democratic Kurdistan that will be their supporter; for them, the PKK is the first organization that will be dispensed with right after a pro-American democratic Kurdistan is founded on paper. The people in question believe that after the aid and support they've been giving to the PKK is cut and the management of the newly established state is taken over directly by the USA, the PKK would not have any kind of authority in the region and that they will easily eliminate the organization.

At this juncture, this segment of neocons that we mentioned are making a mistake that would have grave consequences. This mistake stems from their inability to realize the dimensions of the threat of communism. As a matter of fact, after the PKK establishes a communist Kurdistan in accordance with their plans in the region with the support of the USA, they will switch to a strong hegemony in the region with the communist organizations and countries that they have covertly been in contact with for years. They will get the support of European communist organizations and parties to that end and thus will be able to seriously increase their policy of expansionism. Because communism is an ideological system, it will always find the ideological substructure and supporters it seeks. By means of this substructure, it would be possible for them to come into the picture as a communist union against the USA. While the USA is using the PKK to reach their goals, actually it would be the PKK that would be using the USA. Then the aforementioned circles in the USA would be feeding the very communism that they are opposed to and would be constructing a communist country that is preparing to rule the world with their own hands.

Those who fall into the trap of the PKK

It is an acknowledged fact that there is a segment of people in the Western world who are acutely ensnared in the plot of the PKK, and who imagine that the easiest way to create a democratic Kurdistan is to support the PKK; what's worse is that those people mistakenly define the PKK as an ethnic Kurdish movement. This propaganda is mainly carried out in regard to the PYD in Syria, which is actually a part of the PKK. That is because the PYD is not listed in the terrorist organizations lists of various countries, unlike the PKK, and that makes it easier to carry

out these speculations through the PYD. This point will be more comprehensively analyzed in the following lines. Let us now look into the dimensions of the support the West provides, knowing or not knowing the real face of the PKK.

Sensitivity of the Western world about Kobane

When we look at the course of events starting from after the First World War, which is the starting point of the plans about Kurdistan in the concrete sense, till today, we see that due to international alliances such as NATO, the UN, etc., the plans made regarding the Middle East could not be voiced overtly as they used to be. Although secret agreements such as Sykes-Picot and dreadful agreements such as the Treaty of Sévres do not exist in our day, the plan that is to be implemented is essentially the same plan.

Within the scope of these plans, recently, it has been possible to see the sensitivity of the Western world in the current Kurdish regions starkly once again. We know that the Arab Spring protests, which started in 2011, hit Syria in particular quite strongly and brought it to the brink of destruction. ISIL (Islamic State of Iraq and the Levant), which grew stronger on the lands of Syria - which is basically divided into five different parts and is being divided even further - has occupied fundamental strategic regions both in Iraq and in Syria. Interestingly enough the West who did not say anything while ISIL was occupying strategic regions both in regard to oil reserves and the border regions in Syria such as Ar-Raqqah, Deir Ez-Zor and while they occupied Fellujah, Ramadi, Tikrit, and Mosul completely and then took the Turkmen regions of Tuz Khormato and Bayji under their sway in Iraq and then advanced into Anbar province and approached the capital Baghdad, only took action after ISIL changed their current plans and targeted the Kurdish regions. The Western world, who remained completely indifferent about almost all these occupations in the Middle East, prepared a coalition force without hesitation to protect these regions when they sensed an attack towards the Kurdish region in Iraq.

The second and the real mobilization took place during ISIL's attacks towards Kobane, the Kurdish canton in Syria.

As it can be remembered, after letting civilians cross into the Kobane canton, ISIL started a guerilla operation aimed at the PYD, who held the control of that region. Coalition forces, unfalteringly and swiftly took their place on the side of the PYD (the Syrian branch of the PKK terror organization) and started to bomb the occupied regions and supplied arms to the YPG, the armed force of the PYD. In the meantime, the entire Western media started to make reports about Kobane as if they are all in cahoots, giving the impression that an unprecedented disaster was taking place there and the mainstream TV channels were reporting almost entirely about this. In social media a support campaign, the like of which has rarely been seen, was started for Kobane. As if the lands occupied by ISIL only consisted of that small town, an extraordinary international uprising was initiated. As a matter of fact, while all this was taking place, ISIL announced that they had established an Islamic State, organized themselves in key cities of Iraq and Syria, formed their own army, set up their own education system in the curriculum, put their

own laws into force and established their own judicial system. But no one had even mentioned these regions.

Of course, we would not want anyone in any region, in any town or city, in any village or country to suffer. The people in Kobane are our own people. Indeed, right after the occupation of Kobane, Turkey was the only country who showed any awareness in the humanitarian sense. Almost two hundred thousand Kurdish people from Kobane were accepted into our country as refugees in a single night. Consequently, the people of Kobane were already under protection.

Additionally, we need to state that just as we do not support a military attack of the mentioned coalition forces aimed at Mosul, Ar-Raqqah or any other region to defuse ISIL, it is not possible for us to support the attacks aimed at Kobane either. Solution and peace in the region cannot be attained with weapons but with a rational scientific approach. Peace has never been attained with war, weapons have never brought any solution and it is not possible for weapons to remedy anything.

What we need to draw attention to here is the sensitivity of the West. The fact that the coalition forces took action almost immediately after the Kurdish regions alone were under attack once more confirmed that these regions are the most crucial points for the West. They did not take the disorder on Syrian and Iraqi lands or their subsequent disintegration all that seriously. That is because, according to the plan, the Middle East should turn into this state of perpetual warfare due to a variety of factors, and moreover, it should be demolished and rebuilt according to the Gospel in any event. The mistake of the aforementioned circles is that with their own hands, they are trying to create the portents of the End Times mentioned in the Gospel which in fact will inevitably take place within the course of destiny anyway. As a matter of fact, this is the reason why the coalition forces unfalteringly and instantly intervened when ISIL occupied Kobane, while they didn't make a sound during the civil war going on in Syria for four years and that had spiraled into a tragedy of epic proportions.

ISIL is an unexpected development for the plans on the Kurdish regions; according to the West, the Kurdish regions that are expected to become independent and gain strength had been badly harmed as a result of the unexpected attacks of ISIL. Naturally, having Kurdish regions come apart at the seams is not something that we would want. The reason why this is specifically stated here is that a plan developed and was put into practice for 100 years has been rather interrupted unexpectedly. The panic, especially among some neocons, should be evaluated in this sense.

In the meantime, when we look at the Islamic accounts, we come to see the fact that ISIL is actually an "expected" portent of the End Times. This is one of the "labor pains" that will be realized in the End Times heralding the appearance of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh). Before the appearance of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh), troubles will rain down upon the world one after the other and people will be dragged into a horrible collapse both materially and spiritually. ISIL, which is probably one of the most riveting portents, has been explained in great details in the hadiths. According to this description, they will appear as an "undefeatable" power in the Middle East. They will pledge allegiance to Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) after his appearance and will stop their violence at the command of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh).

Our Prophet (pbuh) Foretold the Current Events in Iraq and Foretold ISIL 1,400 years ago

1. Those With Black Banners Would Appear From the East

When those with black banners appear in Khorasan' (EAST) ... (Ghaybah Nomani, p. 228)

2. Again From the East Another Group With Black Banners Would Appear

... Once they proceed for a while, **this time small black banners appear...** (Hadith from the compilation of Jalaladdin Suyuti, *The Portents of the Mahdi of the End Times*, p. 61, hadith no. 7.77)

3. Before the Appearance of Black Banners There Will Be Fighting in Syria

Following the three portents await the appearance of Qaim [Mahdi].

They asked him: "What are these portents?"

The mutual disputes of Syrians, appearance of those with black flags from Khorasan and fear in the month of Ramadan. (Majlisi, Bihar al-Anwar, 14)

4. Those With Black Flags Will Remain in Syria

.... And again **when a man with small black flag is seen from Shaam (Syria)...** (Hadith from the compilation of Jalaladdin Suyuti, *The Portents of the Mahdi of the End Times*, p. 61, hadith no. 7-8)

... Another portent of (Mahdi's appearance) is that **the soldiers of the army with black banners tie their horses to the olive trees in Shaam....** (*Al-Qawl al-Mukhtasar fi `Alamat al-Mahdi al-Muntazar*, p. 23)

5. They Will Fight Against Al-Assad

... They fight against a man from the descent of sufyan [Bashar al-Assad]... (*Al-Qawl al-Mukhtasar fi `Alamat al-Mahdi al-Muntazar*, p. 29)

6. They Will Turn Their Attention to Iraq After Syria

Black banners appear belonging to Bani Abbas (Iraq)... (Nuaym bin Hammad, *Qitab al-Fitan*)

They will kill (those opposing them) on the land and sea on their cities on the banks of Euphrates. (*Ghaybah Nomani*, p. 327)

7. They Will Obtain Results Very Quickly

While they are in this situation, flags from Khorosan will come, **they will move swiftly.** (*Ghaybah Nomani*, p. 327)

They will return from there with an army and seize Qufa and Basra **in one night...** (*Qitab al-Haft Al Sharif*, p. 174)

8. The Cities They Enter Will Almost Be Presented to Them

Once this is not given to them, they will triumph by making war and **what they want will be presented to them.** (*Majlisi, Bihar al-Anwar*, v. 51, p. 87)

9. Their Hair and Beards Will Be Long

His (the commander of the black banners) soldiers' hair and beards will be very long, their clothes are black, and **they are the men of black banners.** (*Ghaybah Nomani*, p. 303)

10. They Will Carry Out Enormous Massacres

God will send a hard-hearted person with no known lineage and triumphs will be with him... **They will kill them (those opposing them) en masse without seeing any difference.** (*Ghaybah Nomani*, p. 303)

11. They Will Proceed Towards Qufa

Those with black flags appearing from Khorasan **come down to Qufa...** (Hadith from the compilation of Jalaluddin Suyuti, *The Portents of The Mahdi of the End Times*, p. 61, hadith no: 7.12)

12. Due To The Increase in Violence and Conflict, People Will Ask For Hazrat Mahdi (Pbuh)

A great war occurs. Ultimately those with black banners triumph. The forces of Sufyan flee. **At that time, people desire Mahdi and seek him.** (Hadith from the compilation of Jalaluddin Suyuti, *The Portents of The Mahdi of the End Times*, p. 61, hadith no: 7.26)

13. Those With Black Banners Will Ultimately Obey Mahdi

... and they come under the obedience of Mahdi. (Imam Suyuti)

But they will not accept it and **give it to Mahdi, who is of my own descent...** (Majlisi, *Bihar al-Anwar*, v. 51, p. 87)

14. In The Time Of Mahdi, Wars Will Come to an Ultimate End and Not a Drop of Blood Will Be Spilled

One of the main attributes of the Mahdi is his not spilling any blood. It is not the Mahdi who sheds blood, gets into wars or oppresses people. Such false Mahdis are doomed to failure.

(Mahdi) has such a justice that, **even a sleeping person would not be awoken and not a drop of blood will be shed.** (Majlisi, *Bihar al-Anwar*, v. 51, p. 87)

The armies will leave their burdens (that is, weapons etc.). No enmity will remain among people. All enmities, struggle, jealousy, oppositions will definitely disappear. (Imam Sharani, *Death-Doomsday-Hereafter and the End Times*, p. 496)

Speculations about the PYD

The most attention-grabbing factor related to the protectiveness the West feels regarding Kobane is speculations about the PYD (Partiya Yekitiya Demokrat) ruling the Kurdish region in Syria. This manipulation, carried out especially by the Western media and some neocon writers, is sometimes deliberate and sometimes stems from a general lack of information. Consequently some factors about this issue that are known to very few people should be explained in details.

The PYD is an organization that has been established in 2003 and is an extension of the PKK. It was founded by the PKK members remaining in Syria after Öcalan and other PKK leaders had to leave Syria in 1998 as a result of the pressure applied by Turkey. The YPG is the PYD's armed branch. Although the PYD has lately put on an imperialist mask, just as the PKK has, they are Leninists and communists just like the PKK. Abdullah Öcalan is the leader of both of those groups. In their official definitions, it is stated that they are a subsidiary organization of the PKK and that they regard Öcalan as their ideological leader and Kongra-GEL (the PKK's political organization) as the "highest legislative organ of the Kurdish People." As a matter of fact, in the second indictment that was prepared in 2012 within the scope of the investigation about the KCK, data about the PYD are given as well. (An investigation was started in Turkey in April 2009 about the KCK, which is known in Turkey as the urban wing of the PKK but which is actually the PKK's so-called state structuring. In the following pages of the book, details about the KCK are given.) In this indictment, it is stated that in April 2011, Öcalan sent a cooperation letter to Bashar al-Assad through his lawyers. In this letter, it was stated that in return for the administrative authority that would be given to the PYD in the north of the country, the organization would support the Assad regime.⁶³

In October 2014, the Mardin 2nd High Criminal Court sentenced a man brought to Turkey from Rojava, as a member of the YPG, to imprisonment on the offense of being a member of a "terror

organization." With this verdict of the court, the PYD and the YPG, who were not on the terror list, were accepted officially as "terror organizations."

Indeed, Salih Müslim, the co-chairman of the PYD, holds his conferences under the posters of Öcalan, the co-chairwoman Asya Abdullah directs the PYD directly from the Qandil mountains, and the YPG militants carry pictures of Öcalan in their pockets and have them in their homes.

Retired Major General Armağan Kuloğlu states the following regarding this point:

*The YPG is not a terror organization found as an independent terror organization. It is an extension of the PKK in the north of Syria. Once the conflicts in the north of Syria broke out, a Kurdish formation appeared in the north. The YPG has been established by the PKK as an organization ensuring the control of the region and governing the people there. It is an extension of the PKK, one under its command. Since the PKK is a terror organization, the YPG is a terror organization as well.*⁶⁴

Masoud Barzani, the President of the Iraqi Kurdistan Autonomous Region, accuses the PYD of seizing Rojava by force of arms with the cooperation of the Syrian government and constantly lambasts the anti-democratic practices of the PYD. Although Barzani says, *"They are taking up arms with several ambiguous excuses every passing day... Unless free elections are held, no group has the right to impose itself on others. The real representative of Syrian Kurds is the Kurdish Supreme Committee,"*⁶⁵ the PKK pays no attention to these words. Barzani's following assertions are highly important and accurate; *"The PYD broke the alliance we tried to form and started to pursue a policy in the region demanded only by itself. The PYD uninterruptedly continued its policies of taking the executives and the members of the Syrian Kurdistan Democratic Party into custody, arresting them, deporting them and attacking them and it is progressively widening such policies. Because of the PYD's monist approaches, a legitimate policy, a democratic system could not be established in the region. The situation in Rojava became even worse than the regions under the rule of the regime. Demands in Rojava, which lacks any political freedom, are being suppressed with violence; they want to rule the people of Rojava dictatorially."*⁶⁶

The facts voiced by the Commander of Peshmerga Major Muhammet Hasan, stating that the border region under the command of the PYD has been turned into a trading route and that the PYD is taking money from the people passing the border under the rubric of a customs tax, are important indicators showing how the PKK/PYD has made life miserable for Kurdish people living in that region.

Interestingly enough, the connection between the PKK and the PYD – a fact that has been known to almost all politicians up until now and is overtly expressed by the PYD – is being denied today by some individuals and countries for some reason.

It is clearly evident that many politicians and writers from the West are really unaware of the reality of the PYD in Syria. According to them, there are people of Kurdish ethnic origins in the Southeast of Turkey and the North of Syria and these people are merely freedom fighters. Because of this ignorance, they fail to understand the reason why Turkey reacts against these "freedom fighters" and why Turkey did not support terrorists who were presented as "Kurdish fighters" in the region during the Kobane protests. They vehemently accuse the Turkish government with "ethnic discrimination." All the more amazing, there are those who do the same thing even among politicians and writers in Turkey.

The truth of the matter is that those who fight against ISIL in Kobane are not "Kurdish fighters" or anything else but a terrorist group that is the extension of the PKK. The PKK is a treacherous terror organization that has made separatist propaganda for about 40 years in Turkey, attacked Turkey treacherously from behind and terrified our Kurdish citizens in particular and martyred tens of thousands of our soldiers. Asking Turkey to help such a terror organization in Kobane demands an extraordinary lack of consciousness or else, ulterior motives. The Turkish government would of course not help such a treacherous and perfidious terror organization, who has been shooting them from behind for decades and who try to divide our country. Turkey has already taken the innocent civilians living there under its protection. Those who are fighting against ISIL in Kobane are actually the very bunch that has been blatantly hostile to the Turkish people for over thirty years.

Certainly those who accuse Turkey of discrimination are not only those who lack information about this matter. Some intelligence officers, politicians and writers who are ready to do whatever needs to be done for a Kurdish state to be established in the region – even though they are very well aware of the true nature of the PYD – are frantically trying to use the situation there to their advantage. As a matter of fact, almost all of the mainstream media has been used to this end and European and American politicians have forwarded serious criticisms about this point against the Turkish government. The reason why Turkey did not help the terrorists from the YPG has been questioned numerous times, and Turkey has been placed under enormous pressure by an international dictatorship during this period. Right now, Turkey is probably the only country in the history of the world which is being questioned why it is not helping blood-guilty terrorists who've been killing its citizens for years. This extraordinarily weird situation has somehow never been voiced by anyone: Turkey has been made the target of a smear campaign, masterfully planned and implemented, especially by the international media oligarchy.

Let us state an important point here; in the Southeast of Turkey, the PKK has suppressed our brothers, particularly Kurds, for some four decades and the great majority of the people they've killed are Kurdish as well. The same situation is also valid for the Rojava region in the north of Syria. Our Kurdish brothers there have for years been crashed under the horrific persecution of the PYD, which is an extension of the PKK.

The PYD's pressure upon the Kurdish people in Syria

During the first years of the civil war in Syria, the first Kurdish refugees to reach Turkey from Rojava came from the Jazira canton. These brothers of ours have explicitly stated that they have fled not from the persecution of al-Assad but of the PYD. Indeed, the PYD is in cooperation with al-Assad in Syria as per Öcalan's promise of alliance with him; consequently al-Assad did not attack those regions during that period. Those who considered the turmoil in the country as an opportunity and made use of it to flee from the persecution of the PYD they've been subjected to for years took refuge in Turkey. The PYD, to the contrary of the appearance it is trying to create before the international community, is a highly dangerous communist terror organization that has established a Leninist system on the lands under its rule and is persecuting its own people, just like the PKK is.

The following words of Abu Abdullah al-Kurdi, the leader of the Syrian Kurdish Islamic Front speaking in the name of the religious Kurdish people of Rojava, the Kurdish region in Syria, are highly important; *"We've been freed from the dungeons of al-Assad and stepped into the dungeons of the PYD; both are the same for us."*⁶⁷

Indeed, in the wake of what happened in Kobane, religious Kurdish people have declared that they do not approve of the PKK through a press bulletin. The bulletin read; *"Undoubtedly, Muslims have the power and might to respond to those coward gangs [the PKK] who fled from Kobane like rabbits."*⁶⁸

As could be seen, the Kurdish people in Rojava consider the PYD taking command in the region as a scourge and want to be freed from the persecution of the PYD. It needs to be recalled once more that the same situation is also valid for Turkey and that the Kurdish people in Turkey must never be regarded the same as the PKK and that the Kurdish people in Turkey are among the targets of the PKK as well.

The 108-page report of Human Rights Watch from 2014 carries great importance in documenting the circumstances in the Syrian Kurdish region. According to this report, in which the situation in the Kobane and Jazira cantons are examined, the PYD forces ruling the region are held responsible for arbitrary arrests, the systematic violation of legal rights, as well as many unsolved murders and abductions. Although the report was prepared with a cautious and soft language, a terrifying scene appears in front of us: The problem of torture, the limitation of individual rights and freedoms, the malfunctioning of the legal system is in the foreground in almost every line.

Representatives of Human Rights Watch, who met some criminals in prisons, stated that these people in prisons were there without a legal warrant of arrest; they were denied access to a lawyer and were held in detention without being brought to trial. The people detained were subjected to constant beatings in jail by the authorities. It has been understood that such arrests are generally based only on slanders and the confessions by the detainees were made under duress. Almost every opposing voice is being silenced. There are a lot of suspicious casualty cases during custody.

The report stated that children are being given weapons and used as militants and that anti-PYD riots invariably been forcefully and bloodily suppressed. Along with those, scores of other violations of human rights were listed in the report. This report also emphasizes that the PYD is a direct part of the PKK terror organization in Turkey and it states that this organization has been carrying out arbitrary punishment with its own legal courts, prisons and police forces established in the region since 2012, after the Syrian government withdrew due to civil conflict. The report also states that these arbitrary treatments are "worrisome".⁶⁹

Certain Western media groups, which ignored the warnings of Turkey following the Kobane attacks, felt compelled to change their tune as they learned more about the region. Jamie Dettmer of the *Daily Beast* described the Kurdish regional administration in Syria as despotic and noted how some people that wished to return home weren't allowed to do so by the PYD. He quoted a Kurdish retiree named Ali: *"The fighters [YPG] do what they like and no one can say anything to them—if they order you to do something or not to do something, you can't say no or argue that it isn't right."*⁷⁰ According to statements by the locals Dettmer talked to, many of the

people who wanted to go back to Kobane after the siege were not allowed to do so; YPG militants had already seized their properties, effectively forcing them to migrate.⁷¹

He explains the despotic atmosphere in the same article as follows:

Kobani Kurds are careful with public criticism of the PYD, fearing retaliation. None who are critical agree to their family names being published. The party [PYD] can make life very difficult for dissenters.

The same article mentions the difference between the perspective of certain circles in the West and what Dettmer saw there, and provides evidence that shows Kobane is, in fact, under the control of the PKK:

Many of the fighters in Kobani weren't Syrian Kurds but members of the PKK, designated a terrorist organization by the U.S. and the European Union... The commanders calling the shots now in Kobani are not the local municipal leaders trotted out for Western media interviews to highlight the role of women fighters during the siege. They are instead what locals call Qandil Kurds, a reference to the PKK's mountain-range sanctuary in northern Iraq that extends 30 kilometers into Turkey and contains the separatist movement's military training camps.⁷²

One YPG militant who wished to remain anonymous admitted this point with the following words:

Five of the top commanders during the siege were from Kobani and 15 were Qandil commanders.⁷³

After making all these observations, Dettmer seems convinced that Turkey had been right all along in its decision to place its tanks along the border.

As in the case of Kobane, the PYD wanted the coalition forces to target neighboring Turkmen and Arabic regions such as Tal Abyad using ISIL as an excuse, so that the PYD could seize Turkmen regions along the Turkish border and achieve a solidified border line. All the while, the USA and other coalition forces blatantly helped the PKK under the pretense of fighting ISIL. The locals that escaped the region to seek refuge in Turkey, however, clearly expressed that they weren't running from ISIL but from the violence of the YPG. If the USA and other coalition forces cannot see or choose to ignore this fact, it will lead to very serious and dangerous outcomes.

In the light of all these issues, it is important to correctly analyze the situation in which Kurdish people of the region have been seeking refuge in Turkey since 2011 to rid themselves from the tyranny of the PYD. The persecuted people of the region have been trying to escape from the domination of this Leninist terrorist group for a long time. The fact that they choose Turkey, where they know they will be safe, should tell the Western world a lot, which twists the situation or fails to understand it properly. Turkey has always welcomed with joy and honor all that took shelter in its lands and embraced our Kurdish brothers and sisters in the finest manner and made sure that they were safe. Our Kurdish brothers and sisters who came to Turkey from Kobane started hugging Turkish soldiers who were there to help them as soon as they passed the border and expressed their happiness at being safe and on friendly soil. It is clear that they saw Turkish soldiers as their own friends, relatives and even as their own sons.

Turkey is now caring for more than two million refugees that came from Syria. Most of the refugees have resettled in 22 different camps in addition to another refugee camp built especially for our Kurdish brothers and sisters from Kobane, which is the largest refugee camp ever built in the world. This refugee camp in Suruç with a capacity to accommodate 35,000 people has its own school, hospital and 100 laundry and recreation areas. It also has its own water network, which is able to meet the needs of both the residents of the camp and the agricultural lands around it. A massive organization was carried out to meet all the needs of our Kurdish brothers and sisters in the camps from health-care, to education, recreation and employment opportunities. This camp was praised on numerous occasions by the UN, Western politicians, human rights representatives, and the media.

The real reason why certain Westerners act in favor of the PKK

Ever since the beginning of the solution process, which the government set in motion with the best of intentions, we have constantly been issuing reminders that a Stalinist terror organization that desires fragmentation and violence will never lay down its arms, that it will take every opportunity to strengthen itself and that it will resort to cunning methods to seize control over the Southeast of Turkey. Now that the fighting has flared up all over again, the PKK is indeed showing that it has turned the former climate of the solution process into a covert policy of occupation for itself. The measures that need be taken concerning this are both urgent and vital. In later chapters, we will be dealing with these measures in greater detail.

The issue that we wish to emphasize here is the approach of certain Western figures since the start of the solution process. Needless to say, when peace comes to a country, the whole world should rejoice and therefore there is nothing wrong in the Western countries' praise and admiration with respect to the fact that there has not been an outbreak of violence during the period concerned. The odd part is that some spokespeople in these Western countries went on to make some strange propositions to Turkey. Interestingly, all these propositions were in favor of the PKK and built around the PKK's demands. These suggestions had no indication of any desire to preserve the indivisible integrity of the Republic of Turkey or to make Turkey stronger in the face of the PKK. Probably the most important reason behind this is the fact that what will be achieved by means of the PKK in fact represents the West's own aims.

One of the most striking examples of this phenomenon is the statements of neocon David Phillips, who has been working as an advisor in the US State Department for a long time. Phillips' suggestions, made in 2007, regarding Turkey are quite striking. His first suggestion was a general amnesty for the members of the terrorist group if a peace process with the PKK is started. He later followed it up with another fundamental suggestion saying that a civilian constitution be put into practice immediately, which meant that important rights would be granted to local administrations, thus setting the basis for separation.

A statement of Ross Wilson, former US ambassador to Turkey, on April 13-15, 2009, contained similar sentiments. The most important condition was the release of PKK members;

the second fundamental condition was the reinforcement of local administrations, which will eventually lead to federalism.

Clearly, certain U.S. groups are attempting to put pressure on Turkey to portray the PKK as a force for peace, to get Öcalan released and to open doors to the division of Turkey. All these plans, which were made years ago and are offered now as fresh suggestions, are being publicly discussed.

The aim is to give the PKK a federal region and pave the way for it to establish a state of the kind that all nations would recognize as a part of "the project to redesign the Middle East". It is also intended to weaken and defame Turkey, which will be now divided and cut off from the rest of the Middle East as a result of this new formation. The deep states of the Western world think that it will thus be more difficult, both geographically and ideologically, for an Islamic Union to be formed, and Turkey and the Islamic countries will be separated by a communist-Stalinist PKK state which is opposed to Islam and that acts like a barrier in between. It will create an impression of Turkey as a second-rate country defeated by a terrorist group and which is therefore far from being able to find solutions to the problems of the Islamic countries. If the PKK is given autonomy or a federal state, Turkey will have to face a new era which Turkey will have to deal with for at least 50 years and which will further weaken it. Talk of population exchange demands, fresh land demands, and fresh separation demands based on regional factors, when combined with different languages, will alienate people from a common language, a common goal and a common cause. A divided, weakened and powerless Turkey will be giving certain deep powers of the Western world what they have been dreaming of for a century.

For this reason, certain Western powers have long attempted to put pressure on Turkey to ensure local administrations are given increased authority, without directly referring to phrases like "autonomy" or "federation" (though there are exceptions where some brazenly speak in such terms). In fact, some of these privileges have already been granted as a part of the law of harmonization code of the EU, which we will be discussing in more detail shortly.

The pressure by various think tanks, diplomats and writers on Turkey has now become quite visible. Turkey from time to time faces threats that it will find itself embroiled in a Middle East war if it fails to comply with the conditions set by the spokespeople of the Western deep state. It is implied that without NATO aid, we will be vulnerable to missiles and other air strikes and there have even been suggestions that Turkey be dismissed from NATO. Turkey is threatened to be portrayed in the Western world's sight as a country not worthy of investment, where there are extensive human rights violations and which is best dealt with through being isolated.

Let us reiterate: We, too, want PKK issue to be solved. However, this solution will never be one based on the bullying of the Western deep states, which will bring the establishment of a communist state with it and in which Turkey will compromise its territory or identity. The only way to fundamentally resolve the PKK problem is a thorough-going educational campaign that will alienate the terrorist group from Marxist ideology.

Expecting Öcalan and other PKK members to be pardoned is pitiful

We mentioned previously how some figures from the Western deep states push Turkey strongly for the release of Öcalan. Some people who are virtually minions to the West have no reservations in repeating this demand even in Turkey. This preposterous offer is being normalized and made acceptable through gradual steps and subtle propaganda that targets the subconscious minds of the people. HDP mayors publicly say that they want to see Öcalan free. The supporters of this idea seem completely indifferent to the horror of the mothers of the martyrs. They are almost lobbying to get the murderers of 40,000 of our soldiers released, and even suggest that when this is done, it shouldn't be called an amnesty, but "a release from captivity." They are brazen enough to suggest to the Turkish people that "they didn't commit any crime." The fact that such outrageous remarks can be made in our country shows that the situation is very risky. We have to make it very clear that we will never allow such an amnesty to take place and that our people, as one, will stand against such a prospect.

There are some important points we believe the supporters of amnesty in Turkey and the representatives of the foreign deep states should be reminded of:

- As everyone would recall, amnesty has been tried in the past in our country related to this matter but this only increased terror and crime rates. The amnesty proposal pioneered by former Prime Minister Bülent Ecevit's wife Rahşan Ecevit was passed in the Parliament in 2000 with Law No.# 4616 on Conditional Release and more than 44,000 people were released as a result. In the following three years, the number of convicts increased by 20,000 and reached 64,000. Rahşan Ecevit would later admit that it was a mistake with grim results, saying, *"I wanted amnesty for the helpless, but murderers ended up benefitting from it."* Now, 15 years after this amnesty, referred to as the "Rahşan Amnesty," the number of convicts in prison has reached 160,000.
- DHKP-C terrorist Ecevit Şanlı, who attacked the US embassy in Turkey with a bomb, had been pardoned during the administration of Ahmet Necdet Sezer on the basis of health concerns. Apparently, 200 out of 260 convicts that were pardoned during Sezer's administration were members of groups such as DHKP-C, Dev-Sol, PKK, THKP/ML and TİKKO. These released people have taken part in numerous new terror attacks. According to the Security Directorate's reports, DHKP-C militants like Okan Ünsal, Berna Ünsal, Ökkeş Karaoğlu and Cemal Keser, who were later killed in an armed conflict that broke out in Tunceli, had also been released after being granted special pardons by Sezer.
- Terrorists Hüsamettin Özdem, Keskin Hasan Bölücek, Abbas Alkan, Cihan Alkan, Enis Aras, Deniz Yıldız, Sakine Ögeyik, Gülten Özdemir, Özkan Güzel and Mehmet Leylek, who were seen via camera surveillance during the May 1, 2003 Incidents, had also been pardoned in the same way. And finally, DHKP-C leader Hüseyin Fevzi Tekin, who ordered the slaughter of Prosecutor Mehmet Selim Kiraz, had also been pardoned during the administration of the 10th President Sezer.
- On the other hand, granting amnesty to PKK members is not only humiliating but also violates the dignity and honor of the Turkish nation.

- Pardoning the murderers of soldiers, policemen and village guards would be devastating for the families of tens of thousands of martyrs, and hundreds of thousands of veterans. It would harm Turkey in an irreparable way, and cause insufferable pain.
- Any concession given to communist terror will pave the way for unstoppable aggression, impertinence and lawlessness.
- Releasing such murderers would essentially legalize all the illegal acts of the PKK over the past 40 years and after that point, there will be no respect for the laws and state, and terror will be legitimized.
- In order for an independent and PKK-affiliated Kurdish state to be founded, a series of processes is needed which will force the Kurdish people to support it, impose it on the region and stimulate the society. It also needs Turkey's power and honor to be undermined and weakened. That's one of the reasons for the plan to release Öcalan. If a person who ordered the massacre of 40,000 people is released and considered by a strong state like Turkey as a person that can be negotiated with, this will lead this person to be perceived as the leader of all Kurds. In such an event, Öcalan will naturally start dreaming of being the president of all Kurds.
- This new political social trend will give rise to the birth of a new Saddam, Gaddafi, al-Assad, Ho Chi Minh, Stalin or Mao in the region. In such a case, it will be a piece of cake to get a PKK state, now furnished with intelligence support and heavy ammunition, to fight against other regional countries. Öcalan also knows of the duties that are planned for him, sees which Western countries will support him and how, and even calculates which communist countries will lend him military support. In the meantime, Öcalan will not hesitate to wear any disguise and perform any theatre in order to attain this power. He, who suddenly became an imperialist when he had been a communist till then, who said that he was ready to serve the country when he was captured in 1999 yet later led hundreds of PKK attacks, and who made it clear in his books of 2004 that he wanted a confederation, is therefore one of the actors in history that merits careful watching if anyone wishes to take important lessons.
- If the idea that "when murderers kill a lot of people, they become so intimidating that an amnesty follows" settles in the society, scores of new terrorist groups that are lying in wait will begin their attacks in Turkey. Hundreds of terrorist groups like ISIL, Al-Qaeda, ASALA and the DHKP-C, will begin to think that killing a lot of people will eventually make the government take them seriously and start negotiations with them. They will expect that concessions will be made for them as well and that their murderers will eventually be released like "heroes." That would spell the doom of Turkey.
- Release of the murderers of the police will dishearten our active 300,000 police officers. Release of the murderers of soldiers will psychologically weaken our active 700,000 soldiers. Considering also the families and relatives of these people, it is apparent that millions will be terribly discomforted by this mistake.
- Öcalan and other PKK-member murderers also martyred more than 17,000 Kurds as a part of the PKK's internal executions. The release of these murderers will cause a horrible psychological trauma amongst the Kurds as well. The murderers of their relatives will be

there again to oppress them and the state will not be able to stop it. This is nothing short of torturing dignified, honorable and conscientious Kurds.

- PKK members spreading to the cities will increase pro-PKK propaganda, boost one-sided propaganda, and increase Marxist-Leninist pressure by folds.
- Öcalan has lots of enemies, not only in Turkey, but also in many countries around the world. The number of people who have sworn to kill him if he is ever released from the prison, most of whom are PKK members, is quite high. It is very difficult for him to be protected in the face of such a huge risk. If Öcalan is released, a war for leadership will inevitably start within the PKK. Some leaders will even see Öcalan as a traitor and he will be ordered to be killed no matter what.
- If Öcalan is released, it will be difficult for Kurdish leaders such as Barzani and Talabani to stay in charge, effectively ending the current multi-party system in Northern Iraq. The PKK will easily be able to export its one-party communist dictatorship to that region.

In general terms, these would be the outcomes of the release of Öcalan, who is responsible for the blood of thousands of our martyrs, and those members of the PKK who have murdered anyone. But more importantly, such a decision will mean that dignity, honor, pride and virtue are no more. The Turkish nation, however, is known for one thing: Turks cannot live without their dignity and honor. They are willing to fight and die for it, hoping to gain God's approval. If anyone needs proof, they can study our glorious history.

For this very reason, no one should even imagine making such outrageous suggestions to the Turkish nation like releasing Öcalan or other murderous members of the PKK. Those who resort to this inside or outside of Turkey might have to learn the hard way that such an action will trigger a tremendous reaction in Turkey, that the Turkish Army, the Turkish police force, the special forces and the Turkish nation will strongly respond to it. We recommend the deep states of the West and their minions in Turkey to abandon this dangerous idea before it is too late.

Global media dictatorship and perception operations in the West

As we have explained before, some Western authors have embarked on a concentrated perception operation and even a social engineering work. Some do this hoping that the aforementioned one-hundred-year-old plan can be put into practice, while some others do it because they believe in the imperialism of the PKK in earnest. At this point, it is imperative to mention the global media dictatorship that has certain control over the world. The countries, individuals, systems, ideologies and institutes to be supported or opposed by the leading mainstream media have already been carefully determined. The project is based on the principle to support those whom the power groups are supporting, and disparaging at full speed those whom the same power groups are not supporting. The elements of this global media network can never deviate from those pre-determined lines; the news should be reported and columnists should write along these lines. Since this system is a dictatorship, the ones who fail to follow these rules are turned into outcasts. In this system, which is silently acknowledged by the whole

world, perception engineering is carried out accordingly. The administrators of the global media sometimes put certain individuals into operation in those areas that they aim for and thus achieve their goals easily. The global media dictatorship has lately used this method on behalf of the PKK intensively and some countries, influenced by this perception management, have even suggested that the PKK should be removed from the terror list. So much so that, photos of militants of this group, which has been martyring Turkish soldiers and Kurdish people for about 40 years in sinister and cowardly attacks, stroking a bear cub came to the fore in the media with the headline: "*Turkey still thinks that this guy holding a baby bear is a terrorist. Is he really?*"⁷⁴

Portraying a terrorist like a symbol of compassion and presenting this notion through one of the world's biggest newspapers, and usually choosing Middle Eastern writers to create this perception, is an example of this engineering tactic we have been describing. The deep states of the Western world are using this tactic in such crude, common and conspicuous ways that they are clearly not concerned if their true aim is recognized or not. After all, there is no one that can criticize the said media dictatorship or say "stop."

This perception operation surely has significant effects. Western societies, in particular, through the information they gain from these publications alone, regard the PKK as a wronged group of people and fail to see that they are a cruel and very dangerous organization that has a cowardly habit of shooting people in the back, slaughtering innocent people for decades and ruthlessly executing its own members. As a result of this operation, creating an image of a "Turkey that oppresses Kurds" becomes fairly easy. Particularly some Westerners who are unaware of the dangers of communism imagine that the PKK represents the Kurds and that Turkey hates all Kurds. However, the Kurds are an invaluable asset of Turkey's that sets great examples of honor, dignity, honesty and integrity. The PKK, on the other hand, is a despicable, cowardly terrorist organization that oppresses mainly our Kurdish brothers and sisters and is nothing but a scourge to them. The difference between the two is that apparent.

TIME, with its cover story "Navigating the New Middle East," praises women that join the terrorist PKK, and compliments Öcalan, murderer of babies, as a so-called "charismatic leader." World famous fashion magazines *ELLE* and *Marie Claire* also carried stories praising female PKK terrorists. The German *Der Spiegel*, in its cover story entitled "*Allein gegen den Terror*" (Alone against Terror), showed the PKK as the final hope of the West. Russia's *Ogonyok* magazine, an affiliate of the Kommersant publishing group, praised female PKK terrorists. *Newsweek* presented Kobane as a major victory and brought the YPJ and the YPG, the Syrian branch of the PKK, to the agenda. Germany's *Marx21* magazine carried a report entitled "Freiheit für Kurdistan. Aber wie?" (Freedom for Kurdistan. But how?), which contained comments of praise for the PKK. The *BBC* also continuously carries stories in praise of the PKK.

The global media dictatorship and media organs under the influence and auspices of that dictatorship have the power to easily show black as white and vice versa. Those who are unaware of this sinister tactic can usually be easily influenced by this perception operation and regrettably, the number of such people is quite high.

Pseudointellectual Sycophants in the Middle East and Asia

It is most important to be well-acquainted with the flaws of character and logic of those who prefer to support the American, British, German and other deep states instead of the interests of Islam and Muslims. The most distinguishing features of these pseudointellectual sycophants is their sense of inferiority and the way they try to cover it up by putting on airs. Such people, who are frequently found in Asia and the Middle East, make numerous foolish concessions in order to acquire prestige and, even worse, encourage others to make such concessions, too. This character defect – that no Muslim who believes in God and who knows that all might and power belong to Him would ever exhibit – is spreading rapidly, by being encouraged by such types in most countries. It is of the greatest importance to perform an accurate analysis in order to take the necessary precautions before this turns into a societal disease and for these people's moral and intellectual flaws to be exposed.

One of the main activities of intelligence organizations such as the CIA and the think tanks that are the extensions of such organizations is to identify people they can control inside Middle Eastern and Asian societies. However, the CIA and other intelligence organizations tend not to deal with them directly, but use various think tanks or writers and go-betweens. Having identified such people with their sense of inferiority, they then win them over with clichéd language and ideas. They start approaching such people by saying things like, *"You are very talented, you could be a great and famous author," "You are very clever, your cleverness stands out among other people" or "You are different from the rest."* One of the tactics they frequently employ to influence people with that pseudointellectual sycophant character is to manipulate them by saying, *"You are clever and modern. Muslims are misunderstood, and it would have a great impact if people could see you."* Since they accurately identify the other person's sense of inferiority and know that they can easily influence them with such manipulation they frequently resort to such ideas.

The next stage is to control the writings of such writers with their sense of inferiority. In fact, most of these people are not particularly talented writers anyway, but they are in one way or another made into authors. These people are first provided with an opportunity to write for the domestic market and later for international web sites or newspapers. They then become "famous." And all these writings are supervised and are usually totally rewritten by those who provide those opportunities. It begins with advice along the lines of "Do you not think it might be better to say such and such instead?" after which these writings gradually come to entirely support the views and interests of those sinister forces. That is the trickery lying behind dozens of articles in the international arena against a Muslim country or Muslims that obviously all share a common source.

At the basis of this system is the pseudointellectual sycophantic character of various writers in the Middle East and Asia. Let us now look at that pseudointellectual sycophant character in more detail:

The Defeatism That Stems from an Inferiority Complex

The inferiority complex is a widespread psychological problem in the Middle East and Asia. The complex derives from a person regarding himself as unworthy in the face of someone else, particularly someone whom he regards as superior. Many people from Asia and the Middle East are self-conscious right from the outset, due to the color of their skin, the different languages they speak or the fact that their resources are relatively less than those of the West. According to such people's sickly mindset, being born in a Middle Eastern or Asian country, being an Arab, Pakistani, Indian, or Egyptian, is enough to feel inferior. Those born in the West must necessarily be superior to them.

Since they have no self-respect, these people are unable to develop a character that will be respected by others. They are deeply pained by their feelings of inferiority in the face of those they regard as their "superiors" and they strive to cover that sense of inferiority up by striving to be happy and content. They are always trying to prove themselves to the people for whom they act as pseudointellectual sycophants. They therefore advocate not their own ideas, but those imposed on them by others, and imagine that they will enjoy greater esteem by doing so. They live, not a true life, but one shaped by the idea of, "*if you do this, you will be admired.*"

Pseudointellectual Sycophants Are Prepared Step by Step by Their Lords and Masters

Pseudointellectual sycophants are easily employable tools for intelligence agencies and their various think tanks. The bodies in question generally use these people to raise issues they could not bring up themselves or issues that might provoke a negative reaction. For example, it would not be that significant among the international public if an American were to make comments against Turkey, and it would be most unwelcome among the Turkish public. Yet if a Turkish writer says things against Turkey, then that will be very sensational indeed. That is why the identification and training of pseudointellectual sycophants and making them ready for use is such an important process.

Once such pseudointellectual sycophant characters have been identified, they go through a lengthy and fastidious grooming process. These people are first approached by telling them, "*You are an intellectual, and very different from the others.*" Then they are gradually molded into the desired form. During this process, it is the pseudointellectual sycophants' immense efforts to gain approval that most serve the interests of their "*lords and masters.*" They begin influencing such a person by first praising his/her "intelligence" and "knowledge," while indoctrinating that person with their own philosophies on the one hand and turning him or her into a writer on the other. Guidance along the lines of, "*This sentence on that subject is not exactly right,*" or, "*Why not put it this way instead?*" is actually part of the training. Through this detailed training these people are both turned into writers and indoctrinated with a specific philosophy. After minor corrections of sentences in their articles, this then turns into, "*Why not let me write this section for you?*". Whole paragraphs are added or removed. During this time, the pseudointellectual sycophant starts to learn what form the "ideal" written text should take. The result is basically a conveyor belt production of numerous papers, the work of a common mind and

defending the same way of thinking. Many articles you read overseas in particular are prepared in that way.

Pseudointellectual sycophants' education is not limited to their writings. They are also taught in fine detail how to behave in which environment, what to wear, what subjects to make jokes about and how to react to events. They are told to adhere to this model if they want to be famous in the West, to be admired by those around them and to be regarded as "someone very important" in their own country. The ultimate result is people with no beliefs, analyses or ideas of their own and who are totally devoted to the beliefs, philosophies and lifestyles of their "lords and masters."

At this point, the person imagines that they have made friends within a terribly important social circle. The idea that they have acquired such a circle of friends goes some way toward easing their inferiority complex. The people in charge of the system are also very careful to give that same impression. The German journalist Udo Ulfkotte, who admitted working for the CIA, summarized how the system works very clearly:

*The reason I agreed was that I came from a poor family. It was like a penniless child suddenly finding himself in a candy shop, and everything was free ... Instead of money, they gave me gifts that money could not buy. For example, an honorary citizenship award in the U.S. state of Oklahoma, gold watches, five-star trips and even women. **But most important of all I was being included in a five-star business network.** I could call for help whenever I was in any difficulty because **I knew the highest-ranking figures in the network.** You are chosen to be present in the same diplomatic environments as chancellors. You are placed next to influential people when you travel to foreign countries. They trust you. That was a lovely feeling.*

As we have seen, the system satisfies feelings such as "being famous," "rubbing shoulders with famous people" and "being admired," on the part of those whom it wishes to win over. Rubbing shoulders with cabinet ministers and members of Parliament, in other words giving the impression that "you are important, too," is far more important than money to such people.

The Desire for Approval, the Idea of Being Approved of by the "Lords and Masters"

The most sensitive point of people with an inferiority complex is "being taken seriously." Those who know how to do that can easily make these people devoted to them through small gifts and gestures.

There is no need for expensive gifts in order to win over the pseudointellectual sycophant. While they may appear to be greedy, they do not actually expect a very lofty position or title. The most important thing to satisfy them is to receive the approval of those from whom they seek it because their true sense of inferiority is actually in the face of those people. Even if they become involved in the running of their own countries or become the CEO of a very large company, they are still unable to shake off that feeling of inferiority toward those to whom they behave as pseudointellectual sycophants. That means that they can never truly escape the desire to be liked and approved of by them.

Since their aim is to be liked, approved of, honored and esteemed, hearing things like, *"Well done, that was a good piece of writing"* or, *"That was a good speech,"* cause them to feel like they're walking on air. They have no hesitation about writing negative things about their own circles, loved ones or countries in order to hear the words, *"Well done."* They ruthlessly denigrate and look down on everyone. The main subject of their writings generally consists of such denigration. They imagine that the more they speak out against Muslims, the more they foolishly criticize Muslims and the more they look down on Muslims, the more praise they will receive. They even tend to put on airs along the lines of, *"Look, nobody can criticize Muslims as much as me. I know them best and I put them down best."* Or they imagine that the more they denigrate their own countries as "anti-democratic," "backwards" or "oppressive," the more "first-rate" analyses they will be producing. The way that a great many writers denigrate their own countries to foreigners and look down their noses at their own people is based on sending the message that *"I am different from them; I am in fact one of you."* The aim behind their writings and analyses is not to produce genuine criticisms and solutions, but to disseminate propaganda and hear the words *"Well done."*

Of course, Muslims or the countries they live in may very well have attitudes deserving of criticism, and that criticism certainly needs to be made. But the aim of these pseudointellectual sycophants is not to be instrumental in the correction of errors through criticism, but to earn the approval of the people whose approval they seek. That means that their writings and analyses and statements go no further than being propaganda for the circles in question.

They Also Offer up Their Sexuality to Their Lords and Masters

One of the most appalling aspects of this clan-like order is the way that the pseudointellectual sycophants of the Middle East and Asia also offer up their sexuality to their "lords and masters." Male or female, these pseudointellectual sycophants also attempt to earn the physical and sexual approval of those they regard as superior to them. Young girls of the Middle East and Asia are made available for the enjoyment of middle-aged people belonging to secretive organizations in the West with great wealth at their disposal.

In the same way that young girls who wish to become famous in the movie industry from time to time offer up their sexuality to people they believe can help them become stars, some Middle Eastern and Asian women with affectations and feelings of inferiority will also make their bodies available so that their articles can appear in a well-known newspaper or so their views can be heard on a well-known channel. It is known that many young Palestinian, Pakistani or Egyptian women seek to be a part of certain circles by building and using such relationships.

These young women who offer up their own sexuality for the sake of acceptance have also become part of a very strange system. They not only have to offer their sexuality to the lords and masters they are directly associated with, but also to other people those masters refer them to. Although this is a humiliating situation, it is not regarded as in any way extraordinary in those circles. One often sees an attractive Palestinian woman

entering into a relationship with a well-known Israeli businessman, being made part of the circle she has wanted to enter all her life as a result and also entering into relations with other "lords and masters" in order to be able to remain in that circle. Many politicians are known to have taken advantage of this in the murky world of U.S. and British politics. Many Middle Eastern and Asian girls are used in this painful way by personalities that include former ministers, former prime ministers and former lawmakers.

As the public reads their daily papers or watch analyses on TV they are unaware of this painful truth. They imagine that these people are setting out their own ideas and thinking and researching matters for themselves. The fact is, however, that these people who have fallen under the influence of those circles, even in sexual terms, cannot possibly set out their own opinions or conclusions.

Submission to Their Masters' Beliefs

Another one of the most striking features of Middle Eastern and Asian pseudointellectual sycophants is their submission to their masters' beliefs: In other words, these people sign up to a belief system that is developed for them, rather than acting in the light of the truth inspired by God in the Qur'an, our Prophet (pbuh) and their own consciences. Since they completely subscribe to the worldview of their lords and masters, they also shape their beliefs on the basis of those masters' opinions. They do not regard what God says as at all important – may God forbid – but regard what the deep state of America or Great Britain says as most significant. They do not apply what is written in the Qur'an, but implement everything their masters, whom they deify, say. They never think of the interests of Muslims or the Islamic world, but defend the interests of the circles in which they are enslaved right to the bitter end. That attitude is actually an external manifestation of their subconscious hatred for Muslims and the anger and inferiority they feel at having been born in the Islamic world.

For example, the fact that Muslims may be harmed by an idea they espouse causes these people no distress at all. They place innocent Muslims in a terrible predicament under the guise of saying, "*I am making a stand against terror*" or, "*This is not part of the real Islam.*" Defending the air attacks taking place in numerous countries, such as Iraq and Syria in particular – and also in places like Pakistan, Yemen and Afghanistan – is one example of this.

Aerial bombardments are a form of mass punishment that destroys everyone in the selected target area, making no allowances for women and children, or the sick and the elderly. It is a violation of both good conscience and human rights law. Whole towns and villages are not destroyed in any democratic country for the sake of catching people who have committed serious crimes. Nobody, not even a crazed killer, is killed by having bombs rained down upon him, before he is even put on trial, in any democratic country. When it comes to Islamic lands, however, these secret forces put the law and democratic values on the back burner. It is at this point that the responsibility for portraying such an inhumane and unconscionable policy as something "reasonable" to public opinion falls to the pseudointellectual criticisms of the Middle East and Asia. These people passionately

espouse tactics that wreak great destruction and havoc in Islamic lands and lead to the deaths

of significant numbers of civilians under the name of the "fight against terror." If their masters say, "*Let us kill*," then they say, "*Let us kill*," too. If their masters say, "*Let us bomb people*," then they say, "*Let us bomb people*," too or, "*Let us do even more than that*." Yet someone who really wants to fight terror will know that the intellectual foundation of terror needs to be demolished; he will know that no solution will be forthcoming through guns and bombs without intellectual activity as well. Even more importantly, he will know that violence always leads to more violence. Yet what matters for these people is not the truth, but for the people these pseudointellectual sycophants serve to tell them, "*Well done!*" Merely for the sake of a "*Well done!*" and gaining even more approval they enthusiastically espouse the most ruthless policies that are wholly incompatible with the Qur'an and are willing to stand in the ranks of murderers.

Another striking example of the surrender of beliefs on the part of these pseudointellectual sycophants is the way they never refer to Islamic Unity and even, on the contrary, describe how – in their view – such a thing is well-nigh impossible. Even though God commands Muslims to be united and even though numerous verses of the Qur'an tell them to be brothers and live in unity, these people insist on opposing unity. They reveal their opposition through rather cunning tactics. For example, they do not openly stand up and say, "*Let us not be united*" because they know that will of course attract a great deal of criticism. They use fabricated hadiths instead. They use a false hadith attributed to our Prophet (pbuh) but which was never spoken by him, which reads, "*Disagreement among my community is a mercy*." They thus seek to influence Muslims by saying "*Look, even our Prophet (pbuh) says there is no need to be united*." Yet our Prophet (pbuh) would never say anything that was incompatible with the Qur'an. He would never say there is mercy in division when dozens of verses of the Qur'an command Muslims to be united. Unity is a blessing for Muslims because that is God's command. Yet for people with this pseudointellectual character, it is not God's command that matters, but the interests of the masters whose toadies they are.

Pseudointellectual Sycophants in Turkey

A close inspection will also reveal the presence of the pseudointellectual sycophant character, which is so widespread in the Middle East and Asia, also in Turkey. One of the most distinguishing characteristics of these people, who live far removed from the spiritual values of their own country – or who, to be more accurate, imitate a foreign culture – who are ignorant of Turkey's shared values, who seek to give the impression of being unaware of popular values and beliefs, who despise ordinary people and regard themselves as terribly important and who analyze events from a remarkably narrow perspective is that they care absolutely nothing for Turkey's interests.

Just like the examples from other countries, these people denigrate Turkey at great length, make comments contemptuous of the Turkish people and, even more painfully, passionately espouse ideas that may damage the country in the long term, all for the sake of a "*Well done!*" The recent increase in writings and statements that seek to portray the

PKK as a group of freedom fighters, that try to bring Turkey to heel using the threat of the PKK, that threaten Turkey along the lines of *"Either you support the PKK or else you must suffer the consequences,"* and that prepare the way for the breaking up of the country is one indication of this. These people, who espouse the ideas served up to them by various think tanks in the West on almost a word-for-word basis, never stop to think where the line they espouse may lead. They espouse whatever they are indoctrinated with for the sake of approval, a desire for fame or even something as simple as just seeing their name under a column in a foreign newspaper. When they promote these ideas they imagine that they will be perceived of as ultra-modern, capable of seeing what ordinary people cannot and making the most accurate analyses. The fact is, however, that they are people who merely recite what is told to them, have lost all character and self-esteem and are regarded with pity by the majority of people.

Pseudointellectual sycophants also compete with one another in terms of pseudointellectual sycophancy. The competition involves seeing who can secure most *"well dones"* and who can be most pseudointellectually sycophantic. In order to win that contest, they entirely abandon the interests of their own country and merely wonder how to make themselves even more popular. It is this competition over pseudointellectual sycophancy that lies behind the way they shower praise upon the PKK, even though they know full well that it is a traitorous terror organization that still continues to martyr our troops and police; they routinely raise the subject of an amnesty for terrorists and even shamelessly advocate the idea of Turkey providing the terrorists with weaponry. The anti-Turkish writings, or comments within those writings, that frequently appear in the foreign press are a manifestation of that competition. The pseudointellectual sycophancy contest waged out of a hope that *"maybe they will include me among them and then my name will be mentioned in the same breath as theirs,"* will eventually cause damage that leads the person concerned to sign up to all kinds of ugliness; instead of sacred values such as their own cause or ideal, the family, the nation and the country, these lackeys of the Western deep states are far more concerned about what their "masters" think.

Another humiliating behavioral defect that the people in question learn from their masters is that of putting on airs.

A Common Philosophy: Putting on Airs

Putting on airs is a behavioral and moral defect that is widespread in Western countries. These people, whose language consists of a mixture of showiness and an "I know best" attitude have a common tone of voice, accentuation, way of sitting and placing the spotlight on themselves. Their desire is to emphasize this state of being "rather special," which regards themselves as different to other people in their every gesture and action. Some of the best known aspects of putting on airs are using exaggerated facial expressions, insisting on using foreign words all the time when speaking, speaking while chewing gum, describing things they would never normally like in terms of admiration, describing places they may never have been to as if they knew them well and people they may never have met as if they were close friends, and talking about music they have never heard as if they liked it very much or about films and art they have never seen as if they understand them very deeply. Being able to sit in the lobby of a five-star hotel,

blowing the smoke from a cigar given to them as a gift by that hotel into other people's faces, posing with a wine glass in their hand and being seen at the entrance to a famous restaurant are all terribly important to people who put on airs.

Details about the routine day-to-day matters in the lives of high-quality and noble people are of exaggerated importance in the lives of those who put on airs. They imagine they can become esteemed and gain importance through them. They make every effort to show that importance they imagine they possess to other people. Every action in the philosophy of putting on airs is intended to tell those whom the individual admires so greatly that "I am one of you." That is why in one sense, putting on airs represents a common language and philosophy among superficial folk. Someone who puts on airs will immediately recognize another of that ilk, and someone who puts on airs will best understand the language of another of that kind.

Although putting on airs is an embarrassing and humiliating state of mind, many ignorant people feel a sincere admiration for those who do so. Those who put on airs, often starting in high school, enjoy great prestige among other people, while modest and well-mannered people are generally undervalued. That is the reason why difficult, spoiled and showy people enjoy such great esteem in high school. Putting on airs then continues to grow apace after high school. While the pop music groups they listen to, the concerts people go to and what they buy in the shops are all tools for putting on airs in their school years, in the years that follow, it is such phenomena as one's social circle, the places one chooses to go on holiday, the exhibitions one attends, one's rank and position, the car one drives and the area of town one lives in that acquire greater importance. Each one of these is used as a tool to psychologically put down more modest folk.

Putting on airs is a common philosophy between pseudointellectual sycophants in the Middle East and Asia and their masters. However, pseudointellectual sycophants never put on the airs they learned from their masters in front of them. They only display such an attitude to put down ordinary people whom they regard as beneath them and inferior. In the presence of their masters, they are most humble and sycophantic; they would never think of putting on airs to them. It is not hard to imagine the kind of language that someone in Egypt, Bangladesh or Palestine who has been to Europe will use, or the way he will look down on ordinary people. People who live in a state of deeply-rooted feelings of inferiority in Europe or America, and slavishly do everything they are told, suddenly develop an entirely different character when they return to their own countries, as if that despised person had not really been them at all; that is another manifestation of putting on airs. What is genuinely embarrassing is that poor, ordinary people are generally deeply impressed by such airs and regard the person concerned as someone terribly special or important.

Yet the moral values and qualities that should really be admired are those of the believer. The character of the believer, who knows that God is the Lord of all blessings, that all power and all might belong to Him alone and who is fully submitted to Him, is as steady as a rock; that character is sturdy and unshakeable. That person knows that he is dealing with mere shadow entities and that God witnesses him at all times and he never stoops to the facile. He is ultra modern and high-quality. He lives by the moral values desired by God, not by those of the people who would seek to shape him for their own ends. He

knows that the lords and masters whom the pseudointellectual sycophants regard as very important and enslave themselves to are themselves nothing but helpless servants of God and mortal beings. The respect and value he places on someone is directly proportional to that person's love and fear of God. He will never be rude to anyone, but he knows how humiliating it is to feel inferior in the face of weak and helpless human beings. The only entity to Whom the believer will sincerely submit himself is God.

Chapter 5

What kind of danger is Turkey facing?

Everyone's expectation from the Solution Process that was shaped by various contacts and officially began in 2013 was that all the weapons would fall silent. However, at the start of the process in question we regularly reiterated the following warning: No true solution can be reached through negotiations, meetings or persuasion efforts. The PKK will always act in the light of its aim of breaking up the country, with its Leninist and communist ideology and underhanded and bloody tactics, and will never abandon those objectives. If people wish to move toward a genuine and lasting solution, this has to be done through education. There simply is no other way.

Ever since then, the PKK has somehow infiltrated our cities, and its leaders have made their voices heard in a most effective manner, while Öcalan has been praised to the rafters by some of the country's "White Turks." Turkey is now perhaps facing a greater danger than ever before. It is these threats we shall be looking at in this chapter.

Secret moves toward "democratic autonomy"

Looking at the period from the official declaration of the Solution Process up to the present day when armed conflict once again flared up, great changes have taken place in Turkey in both political terms and in terms of perception management. It needs to be made clear that these changes are not at all positive for Turkey.

During this period, some writers were quite keen to legitimize talks with Öcalan. Letters from Öcalan were read by circles close to the PKK under the heading of "Mr. Öcalan's demands," and this came to be regarded as perfectly normal. Öcalan was easily able to criticize the government, either explicitly or in more guarded language, and these all came to be perceived of as natural consequences of the peace process.

In addition, some leftist writers, politicians and bureaucrats went so far as to say, "It is a good thing that Öcalan exists," and even found themselves capable of demanding that Öcalan be released, first in guarded terms and then openly. Some journalists went to Qandil and began depicting the bloody terrorists who had been ambushing Turkish troops for years as popular heroes instead.

This sly change of language is nothing other than the harbinger of a grave disaster. This change of language is a portent that the PKK (and elements supported by the PKK) has gone into action using more cunning tactics from the inside, in addition to their usual guerrilla methods. The first portent of this disaster was the local elections held on March 30th, 2014.

The 2014 local elections and the announcement of a cunning tactic

Looking at the preparations for the March 30th, 2014 local elections across Turkey as a whole, the resulting picture is one that should never have emerged, with some parties not planning any election rallies in the Southeast at all. Although they should have been able to go and hold rallies in those areas, opposition parties that should have embraced the people there were unable to go to the Southeast part of Turkey because their safety could not be guaranteed. They were unable to embrace their own people on their own lands.

Even AKP deputies said that they were unable to travel freely in the Southeast, that it was difficult for them to hold rallies, and that party members in district party offices weren't able to hold welcoming parties. AKP deputy Orhan Miroğlu described the situation in the words, "Fear can get the best of people."

The measures in question by the opposition parties were also taken during the general election on June 7th, 2015. These precautions were necessary, because they knew that an act of violence against Turkish political parties might come at any moment and that the state was not in full control of the region. A part of their own country was completely closed to the country's democratic political parties.

This situation still applies in some areas, and is regarded as quite normal by many. A little reflection, however, will reveal the gravity of the situation and the threat that those lands still face.

It is now clear that the local elections of March 2014 meant something more for Turkey, than just local elections. The results of the local elections, which came to represent a vote of confidence in the wake of a year of various uprisings and turmoil, particularly the Gezi Park protests, were of separate significance to each of the parties. In the days that followed the Solution Process, especially with the guarantees given to the Kurdish people, the greatest expectation in the context of the plans for development and regeneration of the Southeast, were that the ruling party or the opposition parties would emerge victorious in the region. Yet that is not what happened.

The fact that BDP municipalities emerged victorious in all the provinces of the Southeast and that the BDP came out on top in cities where the AKP and MHP had once been dominant, sent a highly significant message. Efforts were obviously being made to seize the citadel from the inside; a party openly supported by the PKK had grown stronger. This clearly showed that during the period known as the Solution Process, when PKK militants were expected to lay down their weapons and leave the country, the PKK had not pulled out of the country at all, but was still

operating its oppressive system and this time, a very different method for breaking Turkey up was being implemented.

Before moving on to the details, it is very important to make one point quite clear; the BDP, now known as the HDP, is a legal political party within the Turkish democratic system. It possesses the same rights as all other parties in a democracy. It will certainly continue its work as a legally constituted party under the protection of the state. Any physical or verbal attack on this party and its members is a grave blow to democracy and must attract the appropriate legal sanctions.

The only reason why we are differentiating the HDP in terms of the Southeast is that this party is supported by the PKK. Indeed, as we shall be seeing in the context of the structure of the KCK, the party in question is most likely under severe pressure from the KCK/PKK. This represents a grave threat to the country. The way that ever since the beginning of the Solution Process, party officials have made frequent references to the subject of autonomy, have shifted their tone with respect to this point and have made great efforts to have legal status granted to Abdullah Öcalan all point to a significant threat. The victory of a party saying such things, particularly in such a region as the Southeast, should rightly lead to serious concerns.

Let us remind ourselves that the 2015 general elections produced an even worse picture in terms of the Southeast. Readers will recall that regions where the HPD emerged as a powerful presence were not limited to the Southeast, but also stretched as far as Ardahan in the Northeast. The reason why we are particularly citing evidence from the local elections here is the dire consequences today, when we are in a time of conflict, of a party backed by the PKK controlling local administrations. We shall be looking at this in detail in due course.

The desire for territory under the name of "democratic autonomy"

The most prominent term in this engineering of perception is without doubt "democratic autonomy." This expression, which we suddenly began hearing a lot more of after the March 2014 local elections, is in fact a euphemism for fragmentation. It is uttered by politicians who favor breaking the country up in such a saccharine and harmless-appearing way that they even have begun criticizing Turkish people for making it an issue. These people maintain that "democratic autonomy" is a democratic move.

The fact is, however, that in the language of the PKK, democratic autonomy is not a democratic move at all. Democracy is used as a mask for breaking the country up. In fact, even if the PKK obtained an autonomous state, rather than being founded on democracy, it would be based on communism and a communal system. Indeed, the KCK declaration, which represents the constitution of that imaginary state, sets that out explicitly.

The impression that some circles are trying to give by speaking of democratic autonomy is that "We do not want a direct break-up;" but behind that, they seek to prepare all the factors necessary for fragmentation. The means available to municipalities will particularly be used for that purpose. In other words, those means will be mobilized for communist propaganda.

While the perception engineering, the general lines of which are outlined above, proceeds apace in the wake of the local elections, unexpected and astonishing demands squeezed into that framework are a part of that same stratagem. One example of this is the way that, a few weeks after the election, Kurdish politician of the Peace and Democracy Party (BDP) and mayor of Diyarbakır Gültan Kışanak announced that, "We want our share of the oil revenues."⁷⁵ That was intended to give the impression that an autonomous administration had been established in the Southeast, as in Iraq, and that the autonomous region possessed its own resources, separately from the state. The Southeast region is within Turkey's national borders, and all resources within those borders, including oil revenues, fall within the country's national revenues. All revenues obtained are part of the budget shared out among all cities within Turkey's borders and that extend to all members of the country. In the same way that revenue from oranges grown in Antalya also finds its way to the Southeast, that also applies to oil from the Southeast. That is the result of the indivisible national integrity of the country. This interesting demand by Kışanak serves no other purpose than to attract attention to these words and contribute to the ongoing autonomy project.

It must also be remembered that Kışanak issued a direct demand for autonomy one year prior to the local elections. It was Kışanak who on February 10th, 2013, told daily Hürriyet "*We have a straight road: Autonomous Kurdistan*".⁷⁶

Indeed, former Mayor of Diyarbakır Fırat Anlı described how this policy of perception was implemented inside cities. Anlı said, "*They are already partly implementing this model in the Southeast, district offices and other assemblies have been set up, a federation closely resembling independence has developed and they will soon declare autonomy.*"⁷⁷ Not long after that statement, the PKK resumed its attacks from where it had left off, and municipalities that were almost gifted to the HDP after the local elections one by one shamelessly started to declare autonomy. Although the judiciary took immediate steps, the fact that these displeasing pictures were seen in the Southeast as the result of appeasement should be carefully considered.

This terrible picture in fact announced its own imminent arrival. The danger we have been constantly warning against in recent years is in fact a cunning, illegal and communist state organization that has already been treacherously put into action in Turkey; in other words, the KCK.

An illegal state within a legal one: The KCK

The KCK (Koma Civakên Kurdistan - Union of Kurdistan Communes) is an organization established by the PKK. It set out its aims and the methods it would employ in the document known as the "KCK Contract."

The document in question describes a state, with its own flag, judiciary and army. The 300-Kongra-Gel serves at the executive, issuing laws and regulations and the executive enforces these. Judicial organs become involved when a problem arises. The KCK is this state organization's constitution. The units and members of the terror organization (PKK) have

systematically assumed their places in this state system. An alternative legislature to the Turkish Parliament has been at work since 2003 and made functional with the KCK organization.⁷⁸

The three-part KCK judicial system does not recognize any action the Turkish Penal Code regards as a crime nor the official judicial system of Turkey. In other words, it rejects the Turkish State and its justice system. Instead, it tries people in its own courts under laws invented by itself.

The KCK carries out "bureaucratic appointments" such as "PKK" district governors and "PKK" directors of agriculture in the Southeast of Turkey, and particularly in Diyarbakır. Reports have appeared in the media of the so-called "appointed PKK" officials threatening official district officers of the Republic of Turkey, and questions to the government have been raised in Parliament.⁷⁹

The KCK's army is known by the name of "security units" (YDG-H). These units perform tasks such as collecting taxes in the name of the PKK, forcing businesses to shut up shops as a form of protest, inflicting punishments and pressuring voters and polling stations. These units are used to ensure that fear of the PKK is maintained in the cities and to maintain the threat of violence against citizens. Even while the co-called Solution Process was still continuing, citizens in Diyarbakır were still being forced to pay taxes as "members of the KCK state."⁸⁰

According to the indictment drawn up by the Prosecutor's Office, Öcalan's decision to establish a PKK substructure known as the KCK on May 17th, 2005, was inspired by the idea of a supracommunity confederated model proposed by the communist/anarchist writer Murray Bookchin. The plan consisted of three stages; a free leadership, democratic autonomy and democratic confederalism. The first aim is thus the release of Öcalan. Looking at the veiled and immoral propositions that are becoming increasingly frequent on this subject in Turkey, work is obviously underway to realize this first step of the plan. The next step once this has been achieved is democratic autonomy, followed by the establishment of a four-part confederated state made up of parts of Turkey, Iran, Iraq and Syria. As can be seen from the term "Establishing a Democratic Socialist Middle East Confederation" in Article 4 of the text, the objective consists not only of the Kurdish regions, but includes the whole of the Middle East. And that goes to show that the basic aim of the PKK is to create a communist order in all the Middle East, Turkey included.

The KCK is in fact a political employment tool personally invented by Öcalan so that members of the PKK released from prison as of the mid-2000s would be able to remain in the organization, engage in politics and not feel marginalized or forgotten. The basic job of the KCK is to enable control to be taken over urban areas by moving away from the mountains towards the cities to achieve control there and to bestow a supposedly legal guise on the PKK's illegal activities. What the PKK, which is regarded as a terrorist organization by most of the world, really intends this way is to interfere the political processes under a 'legal' guise by way of the KCK.

Under the Contract, Abdullah Öcalan is described as the founder of the KCK, who also appoints the head of the Executive Council and approves all decisions taken by that council: In other words, the KCK receives its orders and instructions from Abdullah Öcalan and the PKK leadership. Öcalan has long wanted to capture the citadel from the inside by the use of political action. Indeed, interviews with Öcalan show that KCK is the sole model he insists on.

The KCK came into being by descending on urban areas under a legal guise in order to make the presence of the PKK felt there in a particularly powerful manner. Through this organization,

the PKK seeks to establish control over political figures, municipalities and mayors in the region and is known to be powerful enough to do so and capable of determining members of Parliament and mayors.

The Strategic Thought Institute offers the following analysis:

*The KCK is charged with maintaining control in the city and keeping legal politics in line with that of the PKK ... So much so that when a mayor goes somewhere he will inevitably be accompanied by a member of the KCK. These are popularly known as "commissars." It is impossible for mayors to oppose their views.*⁸¹

This organization is in fact an entity that is commonly seen in Stalinist systems. Stalin directly established various bodies, such as unions and the army and appointed figures known as "commissars" to these. These commissars were essentially all communist militants. Their job was to ensure that these organizations remained under control, to achieve hegemony over the cities, to identify any opposition and to arrange the system as they saw fit. The PKK is now regarded as having established political influence over the HDP by using this tactic. Indeed, the term "commissar" is described in Stalinist sources as the protecting the strong and imperishable domestic loyalty to Stalin by those structures that are wished to be kept under control.⁸²

In short, the KCK is an organization that seeks to bring about an entirely communist order to the region, beginning with the cities, predominantly through the use of legal political figures by oppression but that also employs illegal members behind the scenes in order to achieve the aims of an illegal entity. The KCK Contract clearly reveals that the organization is one that accepts members, that has its own executive and judicial bodies, that tries people, that stipulates the existence of its own armed groups and local and central authorities, that collects taxes and that seeks to establish authority over local administrations. In other words, it is a so-called state.⁸³

The journalist and author Sedat Laçiner's provides a particularly important analysis:

The KCK was intended to direct acts of civil disobedience in the city, to involve the populace in activities, with cars being burned and the people fighting the police, as in France, and thus aligning the state against the local population. On that basis, the KCK was to act as a second state parallel to the Republic of Turkey and would strive to build up subjects of that state. The plan was to create a parallel authority in which KCK courts would take the place of state courts and KCK officers would take the places of the governors appointed by the state.

*Violence still occupies pride of place in the KCK's ways of working. What makes a movement a terror organization is the extent to which it resorts to violence or not. The key word is violence... If people think you are a terrorist movement and take part in various actions or close their shops up because they are afraid of you, then this is an act of terror. If a KCK official in Diyarbakır holds a court, and people go that whether they want to or not, and if they receive a punishment at the end of the process, then this is an unlawful act of terror. A bomb going off is not all that makes a terrorist action.*⁸⁴

This organization described as a political body is, in fact, one under the total control of the PKK, and even pressured by the PKK, as the journalist and author Adem Yavuz Arslan describes:

It appears that the people did not elect those heads of municipalities; The KCK put the names forward and it happened. They have no initiative. They are even tried and punished

for not taking part in actions. A cleaning worker questioned and sentenced Osman Baydemir.⁸⁵

At this point, the fact that some legally constituted parties in Parliament also follow the instructions of and even act in line with pressure from the PKK is clearer than ever before. HDP MP Pervin Buldan's answer to the question, "Do Qandil, İmralı and the party act as a single body?" is particularly worthy of note:

It will be useful to make it clear that you cannot distinguish the Kurdish Freedom Movement (referring to the PKK) from bodies engaging in politics in Turkey. Consequently, there are the relatives and children of people in the political mechanism involved in the freedom movement.⁸⁶

Adem Yavuz Arslan says this on the same subject:

Those sections concerning BDP (HDP) politicians are thought-provoking. Because the BDP members are literally the captives of the KCK... They have no initiative of their own. ... They determine everything, from how they should speak to what they do and where.⁸⁷

The analysis provided by the journalist and author Ahmet Altan are especially significant:

Read the KCK Contract.

It is the constitution of a dictatorship.

I was horrified by the articles I read.

It starts off with libertarian statements, but then refers to the "leadership" as the "only decision-making body."

I do not know what a Kurd who disagreed with the "leadership" is supposed to do. Such a possibility has clearly never even crossed the mind of the authors of this constitution.

From what I can tell, in their eyes no Kurd could ever think differently to the "leadership" on any issue.

The KCK Executive Council can bring in the Popular Liberation Court Prosecutor's Office and appoint judges.

The "press committee" engages in "activity aimed at improving ideological and national unity." Do Kurds really want to live under such a system?

Is the only way to escape years of oppression by the Turks to live in a society run by a leadership, councils and committee and in which a conception of national unity" is officialized?

If our BDP friends think that this KCK "constitution" is really very modern and beneficial, would they propose the same items for the new Turkish Constitution?

Should Turkey also have a "leadership," an "executive council" and "committees?" Should the council be given the right to appoint prosecutors and judges?

If they do not desire such things for the Turkish Constitution, then why do they wish them for the Kurds?

Why is a constitution that the Turks would never accept and that nobody now could even think of proposing to them, be imposed on the Kurds by Kurds?⁸⁸

This constitution of the organization in question is being imposed on the Kurds by the PKK. The fact that the constitution of a communist dictatorship is being imposed on our beloved Kurds, who are part and parcel of us, shows the kind of plan in operation for the Southeast of Turkey first, and then the Middle East. In order to better grasp this, let us have a closer look at the KCK's objectives.

1. The dictatorship system and the deification of its leaders

Dictators such as Lenin, Stalin, Mao and Kim Il- sung, who ran the system in communist regimes, engaged in mass social conditioning programs that almost resulted in them being all but deified. The term "cult of personality" nicely encapsulates this idea of "deification of the leader."

Communist dictators such as Lenin, Stalin, Mao and Kim Il- sung were deified in order to ensure the obedience of the masses. Sometimes the leader would be personified as a sun shining down on his people, while sometimes giant statues would be erected, and people would be made to prostrate themselves before them. All this was intended to portray the communist leader as a guide who could never go wrong and to encourage his being regarded as a so-called "divine entity" who would bestow happiness and joy on those who believed in him.

PKK leader Abdullah Öcalan also uses this tactic of deification, which began with Lenin, the leader of the Russian Revolution, the first communist revolution.

One can see the effect of this tendency in Item 11 of the KCK Contract under the heading "The Founder and Leader of Kurdistan Democratic Society Confederalism." The contract literally, may God forbid, depicts the head of the terrorist organization as a divine entity, portrayed as the leader of the Kurdish people, one who knows and meets all the people's needs. Supposedly, he is the final arbiter, and all those beneath him follow him. Opposition to this supposedly divine being, the leadership, is grounds for war, as set out in Item 33.

Abdullah Öcalan, the leader of the terror organization, describes himself in his book *The Democratic Civilization Manifesto* as a leader who thinks of and plans everything for the Kurdish community, who suffers for them and leads them to freedom and who strives to protect the rights and traditions of the Kurdish peoples in the Middle East against savagery in capitalist civilizations.

Öcalan's efforts to give the impression of being a divine being in his book also attracted the attention of the prosecutor in what is known as the KCK Case. In the indictment he drew up, Istanbul Prosecutor Adnan Çimen described how Öcalan strove to portray himself as a mythological and genderless semi-deity:

Indeed, Öcalan even seeks to deify himself and bestow on himself the title of a mythological and genderless semi-deity by comparing "his departure from Urfa to the

departure of the Prophet Abraham from the Hebrew people and his capture to the crucifixion of the Prophet Jesus."

Therefore, Öcalan, whom the contract seeks to embody as the leadership, acquires both a physical and a spiritual identity, and is heralded as the sole and universal representative of the Kurdish people, while efforts are made to maintain Kurdish society at the level of a specific reflex by way of Öcalan...

The way that the leader of the organization compares himself to the Prophet Abraham (pbuh) is also tragicomic. Because as the indictment states in various places, he holds the religious factor responsible for the backwardness of the Kurdish people and for other negative qualities. The effort of such a person to equate himself with concepts regarded as sacred at the popular level is simply misappropriation.

Selim Çürükkaya, one of the founders of the PKK who subsequently left the organization and relocated abroad, describes the disturbing psychology in Öcalan's attitude as follows:

Öcalan, who describes himself as a great leader rather than just an ordinary one, tried to ensure that militants would remain eternally loyal to him by having them shout slogans such as "We are with you, heart and soul, o Chief!" every evening."

One address that Öcalan gave to members of the organization is particularly significant in that context:

I am someone who regulates himself most wonderfully. I have made myself as knowledgeable, powerful and determined as a god until I attain the highest level of humanity although I started from the very lowest.⁸⁹

Indeed, technical surveillance of KCK members has shown that they regard Öcalan as a prophet. "Members of the KCK visiting the house where Öcalan was born, which they look at as a kind of 'Kaaba', said "We have walked around the Kaaba and become pilgrims. We have rubbed our faces in the dust."⁹⁰

Something similar happened in the Sur district of Diyarbakır. The words "Greetings to the Prophet Apo. KCK" written on the walls of EŞİT-ÖZGÜR-YURTTAŞ (EQUAL-FREE-CITIZEN), an association known for its proximity to the BDP, in the district of İskenderpaşa provoked a strong reaction from local residents, and was later removed by citizens.⁹¹

As we have seen, according to the concept of "the leadership" as spelled out in the KCK Contract, Öcalan will be regarded as divine (surely God is beyond that), and as a result of that, a communal system will be established under the control of a wide-ranging and bloody dictatorship. We can examine that communal system in the light of the descriptions provided in the KCK Contract as follows:

2. The primitive communal society envisaged by the KCK Contract

Karl Marx's interpretation of history was based on Charles Darwin's now scientifically discredited theory of evolution. Marx hypothesized the presence of a dialectical process from the

primitive to the more advanced in living things and suggested that this also needed to be applied to history. According to this false view, centered around materialism, history begins with the first hominids. This mythical creature was neither fully human nor fully gorilla, but it gradually acquired human characteristics as it gained the ability to learn to use tools. This fantastical tale is still taught to our children in textbooks.

At this point, it will be useful to remind ourselves of an important fact we have already touched on; in the same way that there is no scientific evidence for a change from the primitive to the more advanced in living things, so there is none for the course of history taking place within such a dialectic. There have therefore never been any "primitive" periods in which "primitive" entities were living. Ever since its creation, mankind has consisted of intelligent and civilized communities, so much so that there are traces of societies in the past that were more advanced and civilized than we are today. (For detailed information see, *A Historical Lie, The Stone Age* by Harun Yahya)

According to the false conception of history that Marx based on the equally false theory of evolution, there were semi-naked ape-like men with spears in their hands and children wandering around at random. The women would gather fruit or prepare food. These people spent most of their time finding sources of food and shared everything with one another. They ate the animals they hunted together. They shared their weapons, their food and even their women.

Through this picture, materialists - and especially communists - seek to describe a model of society in which there was no greed or selfishness. Marxists maintain that there will be no social conflict in a society in which there are no anxieties over acquiring possessions or having a family. In fact, however, the society described is so degenerate that not only does it have no private property, but also no idea of morality or religion. Conflict will manifest itself in the form of slaughter in the streets, severe conflict and wars in such societies that have lost all values. Immorality and degeneracy will reach indescribably high levels.

Of course there is much to be criticized in savage capitalism, and we have looked at these issues and examined the harmful aspects of capitalist thinking in detail in various previous publications. However, this mythical communal system, fabricated in order to criticize the savage aspects of capitalism, describes an even more horrendous system by discounting everything that makes human beings human, such as faith, religion, sacred values, the family and morality. A climate in which there is no fear of God will soon turn into a battleground in which savagery, violence and psychopathic behavior run riot. Unpreventable degeneracy in which women and children are regarded as being owned in common will ensue, and no institutions or values will remain. As a result of the claims of the theory of evolution being regarded as true, the individuals that constitute such a society will be treated as mere animals that have yet to complete their development, and violence will become a simple matter. It must not be forgotten that the greed-driven system produced by capitalism is not the only factor that drives people to selfishness and violence; the fundamental cause is the absence of fear of God. It is therefore utterly deceptive to paint a picture of happiness within this mythical communal way of living that is bereft of faith and moral values.

If we wish the tragedies caused by present-day capitalism to come to an end, and if we wish people to live as equals and enjoy freedom, love, human rights and democracy, the only way of achieving this is set out in the Qur'an. Only a social system based on the Qur'an, and not

superstitions fabricated in the name of Islam, can enable all people to live in prosperity and justice.

To return to the communal system of which the PKK dreams, this fantasy, based on no scientific reality whatsoever, is set out in the initial part of the KCK Contract in the words "*Based on the historical tradition of democratic and communal living of the Kurdish people...*" and claims that Kurdish people once lived like that. In the view of both Marx and of his follower, Abdullah Öcalan, matters present in modern-day society, such as profit-making and the acquisition of property, religion and moral values are all regarded as a loss of values of communal society. The web site Serxwebun (Independence), one of the PKK's publishing organizations, describes the importance of communal living in these terms:

*The communal quality in the formation of a social existence is a question related to the essence, not to shape. It proves that society can only survive in a communal manner. Losing the communal quality is identical to not being a society any longer. Any development against communal values means also the loss of certain values of the society. That being the case, it is realistic to regard communal life as the fundamental life-style. The human being species cannot maintain its existence without this life-style.*⁹²

By means of the expression in the quotation, stated as "any development against communal values," the moral values such as religion and good morality are intended. In such a system founded on no moral values, it is impossible for concepts like mercy, compassion or love to prevail. For that reason, due to this distorted belief system, man is considered to be a worthless being. As a result of that mindset, for example, a senior member of the PKK is easily able to order the terrorists under his command to shoot their injured colleagues in the head (this will be described in detail under the heading "Internal executions in the PKK"). According to them, children being injured during demonstrations or women being killed are unimportant. In these people's opinion, even if they are Kurds women and children are of no more value than sheep, and there is therefore nothing wrong with sacrificing them.

The need for a return to communal living and the importance of this to the organization is set out as follows in the introduction to the KCK Contract:

The recreation of a communal democracy with modern values means again making socialism once again the rising star.

As we have seen, the ultimate aim is to build a communist order, for which reason a communal society must be established within the present-day order.

The problem is that the communal lifestyle desired by the PKK is the exact opposite of the lifestyle of our Kurdish brothers in Southeast Anatolia. There is no religion in communal life, and the Kurdish people cannot live without their faith. There is no such concept as the family in communal life, yet family and tribal values are of prime importance to our Kurdish brothers. Communal living allows its members to engage in sexual relations with whomever they wish; mother, sister or other female individual. Such an institution would quickly become a nightmare for our Kurdish brothers.

The web site Haber.sol.org.tr says that commune members "*Maintain their physical and social existence by freely loving and mating within a communal lifestyle...*"⁹³

3. Imposition, not freedom: KCK citizenship

One of the most important aspects of the KCK Contract is that it completely rejects the Republic of Turkey and instead, imposes on people a so-called "KCK citizenship." For instance, in the fifth article, it is said that, "Everyone having born and living in Kurdistan, or faithful to KCK system, is a citizen." It is clear that the phrase "Kurdistan" here is being used for our country's Southeastern region in a brazen manner. According to the contract, everyone who was born and lives in Southeastern Anatolia has to accept the contract and therefore, is a citizen of not the Republic of Turkey, but of the KCK. Let alone violating the contract, even having differing thoughts is considered a crime. Violation of the contract will be considered "treachery and submission" and will be punished. Punishment will be carried out by the "people's courts," which is a part of the judicial power as defined in articles 27-30.

This practice was applied even to influential politicians in the region and was indeed put into practice. For instance, the KCK, via two cleaning personnel of the Municipality, tried Osman Baydemir, the former mayor of Diyarbakır, for refusing to participate in a signature-gathering campaign called "Öcalan is my will".⁹⁴

Journalist-writer Murat Yetkin recalls an odd incident where a person who was tried and found guilty by KCK courts begged for an attorney:

The thing that surprised us the most was the fact this person thought it was normal for the PKK to set up kangaroo courts within the borders of the Republic of Turkey, that acted like alternatives to legal courts, and actually considered its verdicts legal.

It is clear that this empire of fear built by the PKK in Southeastern Anatolia is building a significant threat towards our people and forces them to answer to these kangaroo courts. Yetkin makes a very good point about the matter in the same piece:

These are "state-within-state" structures, which are called "dual powers" in Leninist theory, and which we can call "parallel state"; this was also the basis of the "canton" organization in Kobane (Ayn al-Arab). And it is not only the courts... In the rural parts of Diyarbakır and Şırnak, the PKK has set up not only its own "martyrs' cemeteries", but also its own police force, prison and even "recruitment points" which they use to take people to mountains.⁹⁵

In addition to all this, the people who are called "KCK citizens" are obliged to follow articles 31-33 of the contract, which gives KCK citizens **"the duty of necessary defense": "Everyone is obliged to be prepared for necessary defense and support necessary defense efforts... If all peaceful efforts fail, guerilla wars based on self-defense and riots will be the course of action..."** In other words, people are first forced to be KCK citizens and then compelled to participate in the guerilla wars of the PKK, all under the pretense of necessary defense.

4. Efforts to legitimize terror

In the Articles 4 and 9/a of the KCK Contract, it is claimed that **"Kurdistan is subjected to an imperialist colonial system."** With this phrase, they are referring to Southeastern Anatolia

and the Republic of Turkey. The phrase "Kurdistan" in this statement is a false name only used for the divisive endeavors of the PKK. Our country is beyond these outrageous remarks.

It is clear that there is an attempt to legalize the terror attacks by the PKK and the KCK through article 32 entitled "**Duty of Necessary Defense**," under the pretense of "anti-imperialism." Furthermore, with use of terms like "long-term public war strategy," "counter-revolution," "revolutionary force" and "national independence war," the terrorist organization clearly focuses on violence as its primary method, and works to present "terrorism" as a justified method of struggle.

Let us remember one important fact: The foundation manifesto of the PKK and its activities have always aimed to destroy the Republic of Turkey, which is described as a "colonial power" in the manifesto. Therefore the real aim of the KCK Constitution is forcing the so-called "KCK citizens," that is the Kurdish people that were made citizens of this state founded in Southeastern Anatolia against their will, to participate in terrorist acts under the pretense of "necessary defense."

5. Founding a new system of state by destroying the current one

In the preamble of the KCK Contract, it is said that, "Kurdistan Democratic Confederalism is not a state system, but the non-state democratic system of the people." The contract harshly and frequently criticizes the concept of the state and portrays it as the reason for all the evil in the world. The biggest reason behind this is certainly the fact that communism is completely against the concept of the state.

Even though in the preamble of the contract there is an attempt to provide a different description for the KCK, various provisions include definitions of structures such as "citizenship," "tax collection," "warfare due to necessary defense," "duty for active participation," "legislative power," "executive council" and "judiciary system." These phrases all describe a full-fledged state system and apparatus.

Indeed, in one of his books, Abdullah Öcalan, the leader of the terrorist organization, writes the following words: *"...it is clear that we cannot overcome the problems only by working to destroy the state. In fact, in the Soviet experience, when the communists overthrew Czarism and built their own regime of dictatorship, the results proved to be utterly lesson-worthy."*⁹⁶ Clearly, Öcalan and the KCK structure that he runs aim to completely destroy the state and replace it with a new state based on the communist ideology.

The ultimate goal with the use of the KCK

If you ask certain groups in Turkey and around the world "what the PKK ultimately wants to achieve," they will probably mention the recognition of Kurdish identity, recognition of the mother tongue or some manner of autonomy. However, none of these things represents the real

goal of the terrorist organization because the terrorist organization was built, not for the Kurdish people, but for the purpose of spreading communism throughout the Middle East, and even around the world. To this end, they try to use Kurdish nationalism, Kurdish language and the years-long persecution of our Kurdish brothers and sisters as a means towards that end.

The KCK Constitution was drawn up to put this desired communist system into practice. According to this plan, a dictator will lead this system that will replace the existing legal state and people will be made slaves, in line with KCK rules that determine the conditions of a communal system. As this is happening, people will not be allowed to disobey this so-called KCK state's instructions, and they will be punished immediately if they do, while terror will be practiced as a state rule. The introduction of a communist system would not be limited to these regions and the said communist state regime will be exported first to the Middle East and then to the rest of the world.

In truth, Öcalan, who has recently abandoned his communist rhetoric as a tactic, spells out this plan setting a different tone:

The KCK Contract is the first stage of the struggle for the expansion of radical democracy which is based upon peoples' democratic organizations and decision-making power first in Kurdistan, and then in the Middle East, followed by the entire world, by creating a new mechanism of social relations which transcends the statist mentality.⁹⁷

What he actually means with "radical democracy" is the communist order that the PKK has been longing for for 40 years. The word "democracy" is used only to mask their true intentions and their true purpose has nothing to do with democratic norms or governance.

It is of paramount importance that our state and administrators take the following into consideration: The PKK will not stop when Kurdish people are granted the right to education in their mother tongue, or an autonomous region in Southeastern Anatolia or even if a federal state in the region was established. Due to the ideology of the PKK, it is impossible for it to stop its activities in the region and recognize and submit to the authority of the Republic of Turkey. If the PKK manages – God forbid – to break Southeastern Anatolia away from Turkey and successfully build a communist state there, it will not stop and will instead continue its terrorist attacks to make the rest of Turkey a communist state as well. From that point on, it will continue to lay the foundations of a communist world state, progressing through the Middle East in the south, the Balkans and Europe in the west and the Caucasus in the northeast. Once it manages to build a basis, it would not be difficult for it to find supporters.

The scale of the KCK's set-up

The situation is grim. Southeastern Anatolia can almost be considered under the rule of a state mechanism built by a communist terrorist organization. The PKK has now penetrated our borders and reached even the city centers. In some regions of Southeastern Anatolia, KCK courts are considered legal entities and it is quite ordinary to hang Öcalan posters in state buildings and people are tried in street tents that have Öcalan posters displayed on them. The PKK has set up its own military, carries out military activities in full view, performs drills, blocks roads, bullies people, martyrs our soldiers, police officers and citizens in the urban areas through stealthy

ambushes. Some municipalities held by the HDP and under the threat of KCK, which derives power from the attacks of the PKK, take the liberty to announce publicly that "they have declared self-government." It needs to be remembered that this is also through the pressure of the PKK.

Orhan Miroğlu, an AK Party MP, wrote in his article of May 17, 2015, when "the Solution Process" was still on the agenda, "Writing from the Mardin 'Canton'," that 150 people, mostly children, were taken to mountains in the past month in Kızıltepe and Dargeçit.⁹⁸ Şanlıurfa Governor İzzettin Küçük announced on TV that 3,000 children were abducted in the first six months of 2015 in the region. In Suruç alone, 400 children were taken. Küçük expressed the gravity of the situation, saying, "We were informed that the PKK wants to take one kid to the mountains from every house. Also many district officers (muhktars) in Şanlıurfa were abducted to Kobane. We informed the authorities of this situation."⁹⁹ Regrettably, these are only the known cases. The families in the region continue to struggle with this problem, and many barely escape abduction of their children, while others find it best to hide their children or use everything they have, despite their poor financial standing, to send their children to distant cities. The PKK has gained a foothold in the cities and not only does it martyr our police, soldiers and citizens but also takes our children to the mountains, and surprisingly, this seemingly cannot be prevented.

Miroğlu narrates his experiences in Dargeçit, Mardin, during his election campaign as a candidate of the AK Party:

*We recently paid a visit to our regional office and only 20 people came to welcome us. **Fear can get the best of people.** The AK Party will get its share of votes from this town but **people whose houses are under attack with bombs and gunfire almost everyday are under so much pressure that they are not able even to say hello in broad daylight to their representatives whom they will vote for and send to the parliament.***

*I don't know about my colleagues, but for one moment, I **felt like I had passed the border of South Korea and entered North Korea for my election campaign.** I have so many friends in this town. If it wasn't for this nightmare hovering over the town, I have no doubt that they would welcome us as early as the entrance of the town...*¹⁰⁰

The terrible consequences of this reign of fear became visible following the June 7, 2015 general elections; eastern Turkey up to Northeastern Anatolia was delivered into the hands of the KCK. This horrible structure that has taken almost entire control of Southeastern Anatolia is now spreading towards the west, to big cities and even the biggest universities in Turkey. Patriotic students in Istanbul, Izmir and other western cities are martyred by the PKK in full view, and terrorist organization's banners are carried with impunity at ODTÜ, Istanbul and Ankara Universities.

It is a known fact that as the so-called Solution Process was going on, particularly in Southeastern Anatolia, the members of the terrorist organization accumulated significant wealth in numerous economic fields, particularly in construction, health-care, textile, agriculture and the entertainment industries, and that they have monopolized these industries. This is explained as follows in the Special Diyarbakır Report of the 21st Century Turkey Institute:

*It is safe to say that armed activities of the PKK, lobbying by the KCK, illicit money originating from drug trafficking under control of the organization and the fact that municipalities use law as a weapon have all played a determining role in this rise.*¹⁰¹

Economic power has also been achieved through pressure. Business people who are determined not to give in to the pressure of the terrorist organization have to live with a constant threat to their lives and risk their business. This is the main reason behind the frequent news of the martyrdom or abduction of workers at dam construction sites, the burning of construction machines, raided construction sites, abductions and roadblocks.

During this time, the PKK, under the supervision of the KCK, has set ablaze hundreds of schools, private teaching institutions and dormitories. Hundreds of village guards were martyred or made veterans; district officers, soldiers, doctors and teachers were abducted and the construction of dams and fortified outposts was prevented. It is a known fact through intelligence that the PKK has distributed weapons to almost every home in Hakkari, Beytüşşebap, Cizre, Siirt, İdil, Bingöl, and Bitlis. Instead of the Turkish flag, rags of the PKK can be seen now everywhere in the region. The group gave 20,000 Kalashnikovs to its militia (YDG-H) and gave Glock pistols to YDG-H team commanders. According to the reports of security units on the group's acts perpetrated in the period between late 2014 and early 2015 – in other words in the five-month-period when the so-called Solution Process was continuing – the PKK carried out 1,190 social events in these five months. As is well known, the PKK, which is expected by certain circles to lay down arms, resumed its malicious acts immediately after the general elections, ambushing both Turkish police and soldiers.

After the fighting has started, a confession came from the YDG-H: *"We knew that the state would drop the peace talks, so we grew and organized ourselves meanwhile."* Members of the YDG-H who interviewed the *Wall Street Journal* made this grave statement: *"There are many of us, and we are in every city in Turkey now"*.¹⁰²

Hüseyin Çelik, the Chief Advisor to the AK Party Chairman, made the following explanation on December 13, 2013, revealing the gravity of the situation: *"It wasn't the BDP who won the elections in 2009, it was the PKK and the KCK. But they didn't win it through democratic means. They did it by threats. The [terrorist] organization has worked on that election very hard. And this is how they did it: They prevented AK Party voters, and even party members, and ballot box officers, and building officers to go to the ballot box and cast their votes by force, by force of arms and threats. Our members, officers were directly threatened by phone calls from Qandil. They intimidated 45,000 Van residents, AK Party voters and prevented them from voting by threatening them. They set the car of one of our members on fire because he wouldn't listen to them. This is the reason why we lost in Van. It is the KCK."*¹⁰³

This fake, communist state-like organization is under the control of a terrorist group that is in the habit of backstabbing and staging cowardly attacks and therefore, it is not surprising that it manages its control through the spreading of fear and terror. The people of Southeastern Anatolia are living under severe pressure and threat while the mainstream media is largely indifferent to these realities, and for the sake of the Solution Process, chooses to feature people and statements that propagandize Öcalan and the PKK. Those columnists who go to Qandil and glorify (and sometimes hail) the terrorists, portraying their lifestyles like a fairy tale, are shown under favorable light.

The fact that the PKK will not lay down its arms, but will actually grow stronger and arm itself even more, that it will set up caches in the cities, cunningly establish hegemony over cities and then return to the fray as the communist ideology demands and once more turn its guns on our people in a cowardly manner is something we have reiterated and warned against throughout

the ceasefire process. We issued that warning because it is obvious that due to its ideology, the PKK will never abide by a ceasefire or accept any such thing as peace, but will continue to use violence to achieve its aim of a communist state until the Turkish state collapses. If - God forbid - they manage to tear off parts of Turkey and build a communist state there then a massive surge in terror will result, which will ultimately plunge the entire world into turmoil.

The PKK never abandoned its weapons and never will!

Armaments are the only source of power of Stalinism. Stalin managed to control the masses through armaments. Communism dominated Soviet Russia, China and Cambodia by force. Stalinism is nothing without weapons.

The PKK is a Marxist, Leninist, Stalinist terrorist organization. Armaments are the basis of its existence and its current power is manifested through the use of weapons. It also managed to influence Western society through armaments; the PKK, as a Leninist-Stalinist party, owes its all achievements so far to the use of arms. It knows perfectly well that without arms it will disappear and will not be able to impose its authority on any level. Therefore, THE PKK WILL NEVER LAY DOWN ITS WEAPONS!

When Öcalan called on the PKK to convene an extraordinary congress for abandoning its weapons, as a part of the process that came to be known as the solution process, it was received with jubilation by some circles both inside and outside Turkey. However, everyone has seen by now that things weren't as they seemed. The PKK, not even once, kept its promise of laying down its weapons throughout its history and it will not do so in the future, either.

The PKK declared its first unilateral ceasefire on March 20, 1993 and extended it for another two months after the initial deadline expired. However, it never conformed to it. In 1993, during this so-called ceasefire period, 715 officials and 1,479 civilians lost their lives in terror attacks by the PKK.

The PKK once again declared a ceasefire on September 1, 1998 on the occasion of World Peace Day, during which the PKK martyred some 500 people.

On September 1, 1999, Öcalan in İmralı urged the PKK to drop its weapons but the PKK resumed its armed actions in June 2004 on the grounds that "their demands were not met," because it had never actually laid down its weapons.

During the so-called "no-weapons period" between 1999 and 2004, the number of martyrs according to official reports was 604.

On October 1, 2006, the terrorist organization PKK declared a ceasefire for the fifth time, and terminated it once again on the grounds that Turkish military operations against it were continuing.

The KCK declared on April 13, 2009 that it had reached a decision on a ceasefire on the grounds of "necessary defense," nevertheless, it staged countless attacks since then and martyred 134 people during this so-called ceasefire period.

Leaders of the PKK and the KCK have reiterated over and over again that the PKK would never lay down its weapons. HDP members also weighed in on the subject.

For instance, the KCK's Qandil chief Sabri Ok said: *"...Such disarmament is impossible as long as the reason for our very emergence exists right here and it is against our reality... Our movement definitely does not have in its agenda disarmament or withdrawal of our armed forces to certain places... Even discussing disarmament under these circumstances is disrespectful towards the will of the Kurds... Such things cannot be discussed until the leader Öcalan is freed and meets with the guerilla in person. And the guerilla will never abandon their weapons..."*¹⁰⁴

Duran Kalkan, a member of the KCK's Executive Committee, said: *"We don't find the calls to the guerilla for disarmament meaningful or serious. We don't even want to discuss it. Guerilla will never lay down its weapons. ... Only if there is a general amnesty that covers the freedom of Öcalan as well, then the PKK might consider, not laying down its weapons, but a ceasefire, but never laying down the weapons. Guerilla will never lay down its weapons."*

HDP MP Leyla Zana also made it clear that disarmament is impossible when she said: *"Armed conflict has now reached a certain point. I never discuss disarmament. That's the insurance of the Kurds. As long as this problem persists, those weapons are the insurance of the Kurds."*

Cemil Bayık, the head of the KCK's Executive Committee explains: *"Laying down arms means surrendering. It means death. No one can ask us to do that. Let alone disarmament, even retreating cannot be considered."*

In an interview he gave to IMC TV, terrorist leader Cemil Bayık said: *"The PKK will not leave its weapons until Öcalan comes and attends our congress,"* and thus made it clear that the PKK will never lay down its weapons.

One of the PKK's administrators, Murat Karayılan, explained the condition for the PKK's disarmament and said: *"So long as Öcalan is in prison, even if he gives us the order to lay down our weapons, a guerilla will not do that."*

As can be seen clearly, PKK leaders have admitted openly, even during the so-called ceasefire period under the name of the Solution Process, that it was impossible for the PKK to abandon its weapons. As a matter of fact, in this period, the PKK blamed the existence of threat risks such as ISIL in Syria and Iraq for its failure to fulfill its commitment to disarm. In the meantime, it used the attacks against regions such as Kobane as a pretense and kept on asking the Western world to send it armaments. The Western world obliged and the PKK got ahold of more ammunition and arms beyond the Turkish borders that it can use against the Turkish soldiers; now it's directing these weapons against Turkish soldiers. What really went on was replacing their outdated guns with more advanced, high-tech ones. Therefore, the PKK's disarmament narrative has once again shown itself to be mere window dressing and it proved this at the earliest opportunity.

An account by Şemdin Sakık, a former founding member of the PKK, in which he quoted *"Ceasefire is a tactic of war, not peace,"* referring to Mao's statement is very significant:

*Ceasefire is a tactic in war. Throughout history, parties have to resort to the tactic of ceasefire at certain intervals in all wars, big or small, regular or irregular, open or covert, due to innumerable factors. Because this tactic is a **break** that one or both of the parties need.*

Sakik continues:

*The organization, every time it declared a ceasefire, announced to the people that it had done it for peace, for the solution of problems through dialogue. But practical reality progressed in the exact opposite direction. After every ceasefire, **training, armament, relocation and deployment of armed militants, and their certain activities and planning have been intensified. In other words, every ceasefire was used for not peace, but for obtaining a fiercer, more destructive and larger scaled firepower.** You can see this in the fact that after every ceasefire, the clashes were fiercer, the attacks were larger in scale.¹⁰⁵*

In fact, Sakik cites the retreat after the 1980 military coup as a most significant example:

When we could no longer take the operations of the military coup of September 12, 1980, we either buried our weapons or sold them and went to Syria en route to Lebanon in small groups. This retreat continued until there was not a single militant left on Turkish soil and it was done without weapons.

As soon as we got where we wanted, we armed ourselves with Kalashnikovs instead of the guns we left in Turkey. Because Lebanon was an arsenal in the truest sense of the word; everywhere was full of state-of-the-art weapons. It wasn't difficult at all to find weapons, lots of weapons. It was as easy as buying bread and cheese from a grocery store.

We got as much weaponry as we wanted in Lebanon, to which we escaped after September 12 operations, got the necessary military and political training and for the first time, we started to apply all the rules of military organization to our lives. We recovered in the Palestinian camps in which we stayed for around two years and then returned to Turkey in packs.

Thanks to these military and organizational preparations that we had conducted by retreating to another country, we were able to carry out the August 15 attacks. Burying old weapons took us to more powerful weapons, while abandoning the field of armed conflict for a while took us to a stronger war.¹⁰⁶

It is important to pay close attention to this significant admission. The appearance of a retreating terrorist group that abandons its weapons has always been a delusion throughout history. As Sakik confesses, these withdrawals have always served the purpose of ensuring that the organization recovers, rests and gets more training while their old weapons were abandoned and replaced with newer and more powerful weapons. The Republic of Turkey always faced more vicious attacks after such retreats; that is what is happening again today. The reason for this is clear: The method that would indeed completely destroy the PKK is never tried, no scientific efforts are made against the Leninist ideology and people are driven to lethargy with "disarmament" rhetoric. The PKK has always taken advantage of this lethargy and is currently doing so.

In fact, Sakik describes the withdrawal and disarmament statements of the group, which have been quite frequently made over the last two years, with the following words:

The organization hasn't retreated abroad, it just sent away some of the burden just like it always does. By serving the images of groups leaving the country to the media, it aimed

to create an impression of "retreat". So in terms of the militants, it is most correct to say that "they neither entered nor left Turkey this year".¹⁰⁷

Communists have always used terrorism to bully the masses into submission and to abolish state organizations. Since they are never going to give up on terrorism, they will not give up on weapons, either. For this reason, those who built a fake peace scenario in their minds hoping that the PKK would surrender its weapons waited in vain. As long as there is no action to fix the twisted mind of a murderer, it is not important whether or not the gun is in his hand. He will always find a way to get to the gun. Focusing on destroying the gun alone without doing anything about the mindset of the murderer is nothing but deluding oneself.

Internal executions in the PKK

The PKK uses its armaments as a force against its own people as well. It must be kept in mind that today many people are forced to support the PKK due to intense fear and this fear results from the use of weapons alone. This policy of intimidation by the use of arms within the PKK is pursued quite viciously and an empire of fear reigns in the organization with horrible executions. People who are reported to be suspicious are executed by a firing squad in front of other terrorists upon the order of the "leadership," or shot in the company of their family members, or buried first and then shot at the head, and sometimes horribly executed by being drowned in acid. The number of such executions, which can be for various reasons like spying, disobedience or failure to abide by the rules, is higher than any other terrorist organization. Prominent Kurdish politicians like İbrahim Güçlü and Kemal Burkay report that 15,000 to 17,000 Kurdish people have so far been killed as a part of internal PKK executions. Burkay elaborates:

*The PKK **implemented unprecedented terror** to hush opposition within; arrested people and tortured them and shot them by firing squads. It turned its bases in Bekaa and South Kurdistan into **killing fields**. Also, it executed scores of defectors or dissidents. **This meant that hundreds and thousands of young people** who left their villages and schools for the freedom of the Kurdish people and with strong nationalistic ideas were massacred arbitrarily by this brutal cycle of the PKK.¹⁰⁸*

According to information submitted by İbrahim Güçlü to the Human Rights Investigation Commission of the Turkish Parliament, a part of that 17,000 Kurds executed by the PKK are those members that the PKK and Öcalan considered rivals. In his statement under the heading "Executions against Kurdish groups and internal executions," Güçlü reported that Öcalan said, "Let's kill them and be the authority" with regards to these executions.

According to Şemdin Sakık, one of the founders of the PKK, it is none other than PKK leaders Abdullah Öcalan, Cemil Bayık, Murat Karayılan and Sabri Ok who give the internal PKK execution orders. And if the targets are senior-level members or founders, the sole decision for executions lays with Öcalan.¹⁰⁹

The details in Sakık's confessions are spine-chilling. He reveals that a militant doesn't even need to be accused of spying to be killed, and that he could be killed only for the reason that a dead militant is preferable to the PKK over a wounded one:

... we chose tens of militants getting shot over one militant running away because the dead ones did not harm, but helped, the PKK. Their brothers, families and next of kin became attached to the organization. It was for this destructive effect that in 1992 Cemil Bayık, one of the current leaders of the organization, had 17 wounded militants shot by a firing squad in a cave in the Haftanin valley, just to make sure they didn't get caught by the security forces. Furthermore, making sure that militants weren't captured alive was a policy of the organization and similar incidents happened quite frequently because death was regarded as a gain, while getting captured as a loss. Even the wounded ones getting captured by the state was not tolerated. According to the organization, the biggest crime one could commit was getting captured alive by the state and furthermore benefiting from penalty reductions.¹¹⁰

Hakkı Öznür, author of *Derin Sol* (Deep Left), reveals how PKK leader Öcalan ordered the execution of about one hundred PKK founders and central committee members, including Şahin Dönmez and Mehmet Şener (who was the fiancée of Sakine Cansız, killed in Paris), along with thousands of militants on the classic charges of "disobedience to the leadership," "treachery," being an "agent provocateur" or "spy".

Ali Ömürçan, one of the founding members of the PKK, was questioned by Cemil Bayık in Lebanon and subsequently executed while Halil Kaya, who was made first deputy secretary general in the Third PKK Congress, was killed by firing squad upon Öcalan's instruction.

Kani Yılmaz (Faysal Dumlayıcı), who played a part in the foundation of the PKK, was held responsible for not being able to find a place in Europe for Öcalan to hide before he was captured, and was therefore killed by a car bomb that two PKK terrorists planted on February 10, 2006. Yıldırım Merkit, another founding figure who was responsible for the Erzincan-Tunceli region, was declared a spy and co-conspirator and assassinated in Romania. Öcalan grew uneasy of the rising profile of Haki Karer, another PKK founding member, and Karer was killed in a coffee house in Gaziantep on May 18, 1977 in a suspicious attack. Çetin Güngör, who was responsible for the European region, criticized the activities of the administrators during a congress and was declared a spy and subsequently killed in Stockholm in 1984. Mehmet Çimen, known by the code name of Ali Rıza, served 11 years in Diyarbakır prison and later fell out with senior PKK official in Germany and was called to Syria. Upon the decision of the organization, he was killed by being drowned in a bathtub filled with acid.

The PKK killed the militants of differing socialist Kurdish organizations prior to September 12 Coup in Turkey, and destroyed all other organized Kurdish networks like Özgürlük Yolu (Freedom Way), Tekoşin, TKP, Beş Parçacı Grubu (Five-Parts Group), KUK, Halkın Kurtuluşu (People's Salvation), Halkın Birliği (People's Unity), Halkın Yolu (People's Way), TİKP-Aydınlık (Enlightment), TİKKO, Dev-Yol, Kurtuluş Hareketi (Salvation Way) through massacres.

Aytekin Yılmaz, who served 10 years for being a PKK member, wrote a book entitled *Yoldaşını Öldürmek* (Killing Your Comrade), in which he detailed the PKK's internal executions. In this book, he said that the murders were later celebrated by PKK members by dancing. He reveals how brutal the PKK is when he says: *"I saw that they were doing halay [a regional dance] in two instances. One was in 1990s, when the guerillas [PKK members] raided a precinct and killed 20 to 30 soldiers. It always seemed horrible to me. And the second time was when they did it after killing fellow comrades. And then they would distribute desserts to the ones in the wards. They*

did this when the person they killed was their friend just the day before! Can you believe these?"¹¹¹

İsmail Beşikçi also gives details about the people killed as a part of internal PKK executions and the situation of their family members:

There are hundreds of executions in the PKK like that of Mehmet Şener... Those whose daughters, sons were killed by their own friends, by the PKK, have been completely quiet, their lives have been shut down. There is no authority to go to for these families...¹¹²

When Abdullah Budak was killed on November 10th, 2014 in Cizre in the middle of the street, the youth branch and so-called "public order unit" of the PKK claimed responsibility and said that Budak was executed because he was a spy. This, and tens of thousands of other murders, are turning the region into a sea of blood. These executions continue incessantly and the Kurdish people have to live with this horror on a daily basis.

The PKK has slaughtered many Kurds such as Mehmet Turan, Murat Bayraklı, Abdullah Kumral, Dilaver Yıldırım, Attorney Mahmut Bilgili, Mehmet Çimen, Resul Altınok and Sakine Cansız simply for opposing the policies of violence of Öcalan.

It is clear that the PKK uses its guns against its own militants too. Many militants are like hostages to this horrible situation. This is yet another proof that the PKK will never give up on its weapons as it knows perfectly well that if it does, it will lose the entirety of its leverage against the Turkish state and also lose its means of intimidating its own militants into compliance and obedience.

Chapter 6

How should Turkey act?

Based on the evidence and explanations provided in the previous chapters of the book, it is clearly seen that Turkey is surrounded by PKK mischief in various matters, and the KCK has built up its own structure in the country like a virus. It is apparent that the PKK is about to invade the country from within by means of this infiltration, while this organization is receiving support from the West for diverse reasons. For that reason the treacherous and perfidious PKK terror organization is seemingly occupying the country with differing methods in comparison with its general practices. While perpetrating such a plot, it is attempting to cause turmoil throughout the country. In the course of such affairs, some of our intellectuals, writers, politicians and bureaucrats have turned a blind eye to this assault and the daring of the PKK, and some have even had their hands on an operation for whitewashing these murderous guerillas. Nevertheless, on the face of the unrelenting traitorous attacks of the PKK carried out on a daily basis, some of them have come to realize the true colors of the PKK and turned against it. When the southeast of our land is under such comprehensive occupation, the conduct of these persons has led to a state of apathy in our people, obscuring the scope of the threat. A great majority of people cannot name this menace our country is encountering or figure out a solution to it. The foremost step to be carried out in order to rule out this danger is delineating the peril properly and designating a cure as a compatible treatment. The second significant essential is the concerted action of our entire nation, including all political parties and the Turks, Kurds, Laz, Abkhaz, Roman, Circassian, Armenian, Greek Orthodox, Muslims, Christians, Jews and even atheists, when the remedy is being implemented. It should be kept in mind that the partitions and conflicts among us would only reinforce the communist terror organizations.

The measures that need to be taken against this threat are listed below in the form of short and long-term precautions.

An important reminder

Turkey is obligated to possess a powerful army, as it is located in a quite strategic geography and in the middle of conflicts, and is at the same time under the threat of communism. This requirement will be discussed in detail in the following chapter. However, the possession of armed forces or weapons does not suggest making preparations for killing others or intentions for the outright use of ammunition or troops. It is mistaken ideologies and ideas that entrap or mislead people to error. That is why the gruesome and terrifying mentality that aims at killing people who hold wrong ideas is nothing but dreadful savagery and most important of all, forbidden by religion. It is the outcome of this vicious mindset that has led the Middle East to a

setting of horror and war. The formula to eliminate these fallacious concepts is not through killing more people, but providing those that hold these wrong ideas with a proper education.

That being so, regardless of religion, opinion, race and nationality, we take up a stand against the mindset that would call for the murder of even a single person and struggle against this with all our strength. In discussing the elements of deterrence, this important fact should never be forgotten. Deterrence is one thing, war and murder is another. God encourages making efforts for deterrence, but forbids any offensive attack.

1. The state should bring forth its deterrent demeanor

Our Lord reveals the following in the Qur'an:

Arm yourselves against them with all the firepower and cavalry you can muster, to terrify the enemies of God and your enemies, and others besides them whom you do not know. God knows them. Anything you spend in the way of God will be repaid to you in full. You will not be wronged. (Qur'an, 8:60)

In the verse, God advises military preparations as "a means to terrify" the enemies that we know and do not know. As it is clearly understood in the verse, this military readiness terrifies existing enemies or those who are preparing for such hostility and thus debilitates their power. As a result of these measures, the assailants are obliged to back down from their planned attacks and are neutralized. On that account, military reinforcement and power building as well as devising the necessary steps in that regard are crucial courses of actions that Muslims should undertake in order to suppress such peril.

In response to the deep trouble in the Southeast of Turkey that has facilitated the PKK's empowerment within the region's cities, the people in the region are always urging our state to revitalize its presence and make haste in its efforts. The PKK is blatantly hammering away its corrupt onslaught and laying traps for our soldiers and policemen right in the middle of streets, and persisting in their treacherous methods. Our people who encounter such insidious plots also come across the tents of KCK courts, witness the so-called security units of the YPG at every turn, and are frequently intimidated and exploited by the PKK. That being the case, they demand the leadership of our state and our military forces be more resilient in the region. Otherwise, they fall into doubt and are of the opinion that they will not be protected; in that case, they are compelled to carry out the orders of the KCK, which they consider to be more powerful in the region, and seem to be its supporters. The threat is so overwhelming that our people are unsure whether the state will guard them if they were to struggle against the PKK.

In order to do away with these circumstances, deterrent elements should be put in place. No doubt, the primary condition for deterrence is definitely arms and a powerful army. It is crucial for our army to make an appearance particularly in the Southeastern cities in might and grandeur. The military should be reinforced with more comprehensive and long-range arms including fortification of its ammunition; the military personnel must absolutely travel in groups. Special Operations Units should be on duty in the region at all times beside the police force and given broader authorities. It is of vital eminence that the PKK rags hanged here and there should

not be allowed, tents erected must be taken down at once, and no provocations should be allowed. The strictest measures should be put in effect to prevent the mischievous attacks such as the obstruction of roads or setting trucks on fire. The sources of intimidating letters must be determined right away and the culprits be put under arrest. If the PKK attempts at growing more brutal, it must see that the professionally trained Special Operations Units, who are closely acquainted with guerrilla warfare and equipped with broad authority, will take a stand against it. These units should consist of troops plenty in number and brigades comprised of a high number of soldiers should be dispatched even to small provinces. In these days when the PKK has grown more brutal and the news of martyrs have multiplied, military mobilization should be declared right away and four million troops should be called to service at the soonest time, thus resolving the issues related to the PKK in a few days.

The marching of Special Operations Units glorifying the name of God and chanting "Allahu Akbar" in city centers and on the streets of urban areas in the Southeast and thus publicizing their arms and ammunition to the PKK on an official parade will relieve the restless hearts. To remind once again, these weapons would only be displayed for deterrence purposes and not for killing or offensive incursions.

The construction of "kalekol," high security outposts, should continue. The recent ravenous incursions of the PKK against our soldiers and police, the unrepentant street fights and vicious ambushes laid against our military and law enforcement officers are adequate reasons for keeping on with high security outpost constructions. In fact, the Southeast region of Turkey is already surrounded by a perilous geography in consideration of our Syrian and Iraqi borders. Accordingly, the continuation of building these outposts has great significance in that regard too. While the number of high security outposts is multiplying, their quality should also be enhanced, turning them into living spaces providing facilities for health, education and social activities in a way to contribute to the people of the region while also serving as security points. The mobile electronic system integration should be transformed into a highly professional scheme to allow for the best and most far-reaching monitoring in the region.

Cemil Bayık, who once confessed that he "was defeated by ISIL that carried out guerrilla warfare on lowlands"¹¹³ set forth in the *Die Zeit* newspaper, "Turkey can no longer combat against us with regular armed forces".¹¹⁴ In this way he clearly set out how he was in despair in the face of treacherous attacks that hit from behind like his own way of assault, and regards Turkey as incapacitated – just because Turkey does not take part in perfidious guerrilla warfare. For that reason, the manufacturing and purchase of long-range missiles should be accelerated and these missiles should be directly deployed towards predominantly risky territories and indeed immediately towards Mount Qandil. Missiles are definitely the most effective and deterrent arms in comparison to other weapons of defense such as tanks, rifles, cannon and even fighter jets. That being the case, it is of vital necessity to give prominence to deployment of long-range missiles.

Taking an example from Iran will be pertinent at this point. It may be recalled that Iran launched an unexpected operation against the PJAK (the Iranian branch of the PKK) in 2011. In this operation, the PKK militants that had infiltrated into Iran were turned away, and Iran's Revolutionary Guard Corps chased off the militants up to Mount Qandil, got hold of an entire PKK camp and granted a certain time period to the PKK for them to pull back right before Iran's preparations for a full- scale military operation targeting the camps. The Peshmerga in Iraq was

also alerted to secure their borders. At that time, out of excessive fear, the PJAK pulled back long before the time given to them by Iran's Revolutionary Guard Corps and was obliged to announce a "unilateral" ceasefire. Thus, they "kindly requested" Iran to comply with this unilateral ceasefire. PKK leader Karayılan's statements at that time reveal how the Iranian regime had a powerful effect against the PKK:

*... There will **no longer be any PJAK guerillas** in Mount Qandil's territory and other areas over the border. This is a measure implemented **unilaterally not to spark off Iran for a new attack** and **I hope** Iran will take notice of this, too. At this stage, this prospect of confrontation with Iran is at a very critical point because, if after this stage, **Iran starts its onslaught once again**, then not only PJAK, but we, as the PKK, will also have to step in... However, we, as the PKK, have not declared any war against Iran and **we do not want** to fight against the Islamic Republic of Iran.*

This reluctance of Karayılan for an armed struggle against Iran is because of its fear of Iran's arms and the country's strong military force, and its expected defeat. Karayılan's whiny statements are in a way to confirm this:

*By means of this attack carried out in person of PJAK, Iran wants to invade Mount Qandil in its totality... It has deployed all its tanks, cannons, and modern armament and **missiles, capable of hitting not only Qandil and Hewler, but also much far, bazookas and entire technique, along with 30 thousand of troops right across Mount Qandil.***¹¹⁵

It is important to remind one thing here: We would not in any way approve Iran's practices like ferocity, intrusion or execution. Yet, it is important to take into consideration the example of Iran in terms of deterrence and display of power. As can be seen in the statements of Karayılan, the Iranian missiles lined up on the border, and the arms and troops of Iran caused tremendous panic in the PKK's ranks, to such an extent that the PKK came to a point that it had to state that it has no relation to PJAK, even though it is actually a branch of the PKK. It apparently appealed for mercy from Iran, and begged Iran to abide by the ceasefire it was forced to declare. This was the outcome of this Iranian power play. Certainly, Turkey, too, has a strong army and capacity. It will be beneficial to implement the deterrent attributes of Iran but not its anti-democratic practices, and possibly further collaborate with Iran in the struggle against the PKK. In the following pages, this topic will be dealt with in detail.

2. The village guard system should be reinforced

The village guard system is one of the most substantial defense mechanisms that have dealt a major blow to the PKK in the Southeast. The beautiful Kurdish community of the Southeast risked their lives for years but never gave free passage to the communist terror organization that made its way by exploiting the notion of Kurdish nationalism. Even during the period when the Ergenekon terror organization was committing ruthless persecution in the region – this topic will be articulated in subsequent parts – they did not lose heart; getting strength from their fear of God, their faith, and love for their homeland and nation, they turned their bodies into shields. A majority of the provinces and villages of the Southeast at no time turned into a hearth and home for the PKK due to the courageous and brave struggle of these unnamed heroes, and it was not

even possible for the PKK to take a step into these territories. A total of 70,000 village guards loyal to their nation have paid service against the PKK militants and many of our village guards were martyred on that account when the PKK targeted their families and raided their villages. Despite all this, our village guards duly performed their duties for the country with no fear, having faith that their lives are for God and in submission to our Lord, holding their heads up all the time.

If we pay close attention, it is the village guards that caused the PKK run into difficulties and disturbances throughout its history. According to the amendment made in Village Law number 422 on March 26th, 1985 the Temporary Village Guard system was enacted. Right after the villages on the side of the state attained village guard status, the PKK pointed its treacherous guns at the village guards, and even further, raided their villages and slaughtered their spouses, elders and children. This is further evidence affirming that the PKK is a perfidious terror organization that shoots against innocent women, children and elderly people and sets houses with babies in cradles on fire, not only defenseless soldiers or village guards. As a matter of fact, Öcalan singled out the village guards and their families in many of his instructions, and ordered the following: *"We have to circumvent them including their villages, in person and their families. They have to be reproached with a special setting of revenge. We cannot ignore them; suppression is imperative."*¹¹⁶

The numbers given by Ümit Özdağ in his book are dreadfully gruesome:

*In this period when the PKK's revolutionary violence knew no limits, a total of 799 civilians were massacred including 243 babies and children, and 172 women. At the end of this term, the village guards had given 1,614 martyrs in total. And 1,856 of the village guards turned out to be veterans.*¹¹⁷

The "Kurdism" propaganda of the PKK and how it manipulates people through its exploitation of Kurdish nationalist sentiment is completely invalidated with the fact of the village guard system. The majority of our village guards are of Kurdish and Zaza origin. Ata Altın, the General Coordinator of Temporary Village Guards Association and Federation of Families of Martyrs, has stated that the village guards incorporate a body of one million including their family members, and *"are of Kurdish origin and speak in Kurdish language. They live by the Kurdish culture, but do not want terrorism or separation."*¹¹⁸

Adem Çakmak, the chief village guard in Ergani Kortaş Village, gives this affable testimony:

*We are on the side of the state. I was the first one to arm in Ergani, two years ago. We were against the PKK then, and still we are. We have been armed to prevent the loss of this land. Some rascals are not allowed to get some weapons in their hands and declare these territories to be "Kurdistan". We do not accept this, and we are not in denial of our origins here. We are also Kurds, but not separatists.*¹¹⁹

In all its specifications for disarmament throughout its history, the PKK has insisted on the abolition of the village guard system as the primary principle and asked for its quick implementation. It may be recalled that during the scope of the Solution Process, a similar list of conditions was imposed by the PKK, including ten provisions that particularly aimed at the village guards under the title, "socio-economic dimensions of the Solution Process." According to this provision, the requirement was "... to eliminate all socio-economic problems that emerged during the 30-year long armed conflict such as the village guard system and evacuated villages." This

provision actually points out to this fact again that the village guard system is obviously the soft spot of the PKK and a pain in their heart.

In these circumstances, the case of village guards should be handled more seriously by our state. The village guard systems should be fortified more seriously, and the number of village guards should be multiplied two folds, in addition to their being under further protection and support of our state. Village guards should be equipped with powerful weapons, and laws should be enforced to allow for their carrying arms wherever they go. Their salaries should be improved with new arrangements and the conditions of their living with their families in a secure environment must be in assurance. It is known that our government is currently working on this matter and these efforts are delighting us. The fact that temporary village guards are not covered by the social security services is a grave issue, which needs to be resolved right away and the required insurance coverage has to be put into effect immediately. These people have risked their lives for the good pleasure of God and in the name of their nation. Therefore, if they are injured in any way, their goodness and welfare of their families and their being protected under social security should be under the responsibility of the state. It is of great significance that village guards should not be bereaved of their weapons after retirement because it is known that the PKK designates these people as enemies, and anticipates a time when they will have no defense. For that reason leaving these people unguarded would mean putting them in the crosshairs of the PKK. By paying a certain salary even in their retirement, they should be guaranteed a prosperous life with their families.

Time after time, there should be gatherings for consultation with our village guards who have directly taken part in the struggle against the PKK for 20 years, and their experience and intelligence should be evaluated on a continual basis. It is a widely known practice that soldiers act together with the village guards, as the soldiers are not so well informed about the lay of the land. Therefore, it is obvious from all aspects how influential the village guards are.

More frequent acts of kidnappings and the taking of hostages are more evidence of how the PKK is disturbed by the village guard system. However, such incidents sometimes result in the martyrdom of our village guards since they are not guarded adequately. What's more, for a long time, our village guards are being intimidated and terrorized by the PKK by means of threatening letters. In these letters of intimidation it writes, "*Enemy! Give back your weapon, so that you may have the right to live in Kurdistan!*" Thus the arms given by the state are described as weapons of the enemy while the Southeast of our country is called Kurdistan. While this recklessness is persisting, ignoring the current incidents in the Southeast would be against all rationality and conscience.

The following statements by the Chairman of the Fraternal Association for Preserving Rights of Temporary Village Guards on A9 Television are highly significant:

*While we were on duty, and when our state was in need of us, and we were right in charge of our struggle, the PKK would look for a place to hide on encountering us. There was no such thing as the PKK then.*¹²⁰

It is obvious that the village guard system is one of the vital systems that both the PKK fears and feels desperately about. The manner in which our President attaches significance to this matter is clearly observed in his meeting with the village guards. The government should

preserve this sensibility and the village guards should be assured of the continuous support of the state.

3. Kurdish as the native language: A tactic, or a necessity?

It is obvious that the issue labeled as "Kurdish as the native language" is quite a sensitive matter for some of our Kurdish brothers. Many mothers and fathers speak only Kurdish in the Southeast, and many are concerned that their primary language would be lost on that account. Such concern seems to be reasonable in view of the practices in Turkey's history in having the Kurdish language forgotten, and casting off people who speak or write in Kurdish, even having gone so far as to imprison them in the past. As we will see in the following parts, the Ergenekon terror organization also tyrannized our Kurdish brothers on various matters, including the use of the Kurdish language.

Let us make one point: Making Kurdish forgotten as a language or casting it off will never be encountered in this country again as we will definitely never allow this to happen. On the contrary, Kurdish should be spoken a great deal more as an important value of our country; courses and associations should be instituted for teaching the language, the number of works in Kurdish should increase and Kurdish songs should be listened to more.

The initiatives of our government in the last decade on this matter are very promising. The launch of TRT Kurdi, and various other openings for Kurdish, and most important of all, the preparation of the Qur'an's translation into Kurdish by the Directorate of the Religious Affairs are substantial improvements. The fact that the Qur'an has not been published in Kurdish till now shows the severity of the pressure on Kurdish language. It is well known that the Directorate of Religious Affairs is making preparations also for printing the translation of the Qur'an in other languages and dialects in Turkey. This should be viewed as very good news and it will be highly beneficial to undertake such work in Turkey in other languages such as Albanian, Armenian and Greek as well.

On the matter of native language: Our Kurdish brothers have to be very careful on this matter because the discussion on native language is deliberately plotted by the PKK as a tactic in order to discriminate between Turks and Kurds living in the same country. The PKK has always resorted to taking advantage of Kurdish nationalism as a veil to conceal its communist attacks or utilize it as a justification for its terrorism. That is why they have brought this topic of native language to the agenda in order to make it seem as if their intention is to save the Kurds. We need to recall here once again: It is obvious that the bloody attacks that the PKK has started again is not for the salvation of our Kurdish brothers.

Şemdin Sakık explained why the condition for "Using Kurdish as a native language in the public domain" was added to the list of demands in the hunger strike started by "PKK's coercion" in 58 prisons all over Turkey by the 483 prisoners affiliated with the PKK and PJAK:

For example, at the beginning, the request for "Education in Native Language" was not among the targets of the strike; it was obvious that the ones who planned for it had forgotten to add that slogan to the list of demands.

But, why?

*Forgetting is the activity in the brain to clear away unnecessary things. They forgot because the PKK... never had any issues for "Education in Native Language". On the contrary, any new step made by the government to improve the Kurdish language and culture, such as the launch of the TRT-6 broadcasts along with Kurdish being included amongst elected courses in school curricula, drew a reaction on their side and they did everything to frustrate these steps. They even threatened the Kurdish girl Rojin because she was working for TRT-6. They are essentially so distant to the Kurdish culture that they **even do not speak Kurdish in their daily dealings**. That was why they did not remember adding the "Education in Native Language" item to the list of demands, **because they had no such purpose**. Why they annexed it later on was to receive the support of Kurdish people to this so-called protest and conceal the real purpose of the protest.¹²¹*

In truth, it is a known fact that Turkish is used for communication by the PKK in its publications and correspondence while again Turkish is spoken in the meetings of the PKK unless there is another occasional requisite.¹²² Many people are not proficient in Kurdish, and the Kurdish dialect spoken in different villages or provinces is not similar; that is why Kurdish is not preferred as a way of communication. For that reason, the best way of communication between them is Turkish. They have again invariably referred to works in Turkish to read and understand their ideology because of the insufficiency of the publications in Kurdish.

In that regard, the PKK has no concerns for Kurdish language in reality. The terrorist organization gets use of the native language concept to create an image that "We are defending the rights of Kurds," and in this way, they focus on winning over public opinion in the Kurdish community. Yet, Kurdish is not a preferable language spoken among the younger Kurdish generation. It is not possible to open to the world, or attain historical knowledge, or have access to works on literature, science, technology, general culture or politics in the Kurdish language. While it is possible to find a renowned foreign work published in Turkish, this is not the case for the Kurdish language. An analysis carried out by the 21st Century Institute in Diyarbakır is below:

There are a considerable amount of people who doesn't speak Kurdish because they are ethnically Turkish and also a great majority of people who speak very little Kurdish or Zaza language even though they are ethnically Kurds or Zazas; thus they all speak only Turkish in their daily lives. The fact that the local tradesmen stick to Turkish when they put on job postings, despite all the efforts carried out by the local municipalities to make everything Kurdish, demonstrates that the efforts to make everything Kurdish is not a natural process but a political one.¹²³

This is of course a political process. No ethnic group living on these lands ever since the Ottomans made it a point to distinguish themselves with their mother tongues. Although the Ottoman state consisted of a large variety of ethnic groups who were completely different from one another, the official language of the Ottomans was always Turkish. It was mandatory for governors and deputies in the Parliament to know and speak Turkish. The language used in the Enderun School, which raised state officials, was Turkish and the recordings of court proceedings were also kept in the Turkish language. This was the case in Arabia, Egypt, Benghazi, Tripoli, Rumelia, the Balkans, in short, everywhere under the rule of the Ottomans. This was because every individual living on Ottoman lands was regarded as Turkish, a representative of the nation,

regardless of his religion and race. The concept of "Turkishness" mentioned here and the use of the Turkish language as the primary language is not an attitude aimed to exalt an ethnic group but a concept identifying the integrity of a nation.

When we look at the democratic countries of our day, we will see that the current implementation is no different than this one. Among the international conventions, European Court of Human Rights (ECHR) jurisprudence is the one consisting of the most admissible verdicts with the highest power of sanction in force today in Europe and worldwide, especially in respect to human rights. Consequently, taking the ECHR as the truest reference guide in not only matters of human rights, but also regarding language, culture and identity, which also constitute the parts of human rights is the accurate approach. ECHR jurisprudence contains numerous rulings that reject the search for a different language in unitary states. Some examples on this matter are below:

An appeal was made from Turkey to the ECHR in which a citizen who wanted to change his name and use letters such as q, w and x letters that are not used in the Turkish language, appealed to the court after exhausting domestic remedies. The ECHR overruled the claim.

The Federal Court of Switzerland, taking the command of the constitution related with the use of languages into consideration, refused to hear the cases demanding to give education and open schools in languages other than Switzerland's national languages of German, French, Italian and Rotoromanian and its official languages (German, French and Italian), no matter what the mother tongue of the petitioning citizen is.¹²⁴

The PKK, in its own twisted ways, is trying to snatch the Southeast region from Turkey through a series of phases. For this communist organization, breaking apart the official language will be a factor that will expedite this disengagement the most. That is because once they do this, eventually a Kurdish citizen who would come to Ankara or Istanbul from the Southeast would suffer the difficulties of being a stranger to the culture and a doctor, who would be assigned to the Southeast from the city in North would not be able to communicate with his patients; likewise, a teacher who would be assigned from Antalya would be unable to teach anything to his students. That would bring about severely disconnected communities living in the same country but speaking different languages and are unable to communicate with each other. In order to lay the grounds for this so-called "natural separation" the PKK is using this mask of the mother tongue. They have invented this as the shortest way to completely isolate the Southeast of the country and to establish a communist administration therein to pressure the people of the region, as they like.

Sadi Somuncuoğlu, one of our former ministers, summarized the situation as follows:

*The primary goal of these discussions about language is to legalize and legitimize the bloody terror targeting our very existence under the guise of "language and cultural rights"; the second goal is to ensure the switch to a "bilingual-two identity" state structure. In this way, the path to fragmentize our country will be opened.*¹²⁵

This plot designed to divide the Turkish nation, which has lived on the same lands for hundreds of years, should not deceive our Kurdish brothers. The Kurdish language should of course be taught in schools; it should definitely be encouraged and kept alive and enriched with literary, political and artistic works. The Kurdish language should be preserved and widespread as an important value and part of Turkish people. However, by attempting to make Turkish

forgotten as a language and teaching Kurdish alone in the region, this treacherous terror organization wants to establish a foundation to create a very deeply-rooted problem, using language as a means to externalize and alienate our Kurdish mothers, fathers, grandfathers, grandmothers and our Kurdish sisters and brothers from the rest of Turkey and to use this as a means of separation.

4. Invigorating religiousness

One of the most important characteristics of our Southeast region in which our brothers with Kurdish, Zaza and Arab origins mostly live is that their people are very religious. Those lands have been kneaded with the warmth, beauty and beautiful morality of Islam; strengthened with deep love and affection to God and have remained standing on those foundations. Our Kurdish brothers cannot think of being removed from religion and cannot live away from religion. Therefore, despite all the pressures they face, they have stood up against the threats of the treacherous PKK all the way and behaved resolutely to preserve the integrity of our homeland with the strength of their faith, despite all the oppressions carried out in the past by the deep state. In fact, the religiousness that rules the region is the primary reason for the failure of the PKK in attaining sovereignty in our Southeast region for all these decades.

In order to be able to overthrow the feudal system under the rule of tribes living in the region, a different and highly erroneous approach was adopted in the past. And an understanding, which suggested that these regions would be freed from the feudal order if they remain distant from religion, was developed. Therefore the youngsters of the region were given an educational style with largely leftist tendencies that generally remain aloof from religion. By doing so, a sort of affected culture in which leftist discourses prevail was developed. The decrease in the rate of religiousness among Kurdish youngsters is one of the tragic results brought about by this method. Some of the new generation Kurdish youth were brought up according to this mindset and as a result of this erroneous education they've been given, they were left in the middle of the "irreligiousness-Kurdish ethnocentrism-PKK" axis. These young people are enraged by events that took place in the past even though they are well aware of the fact that the solution is not to be found in the PKK. Yet because the common understanding of religiosity that bound the Kurdish communities to our state for years has been interrupted, they tended involuntarily towards the PKK.

In the following pages of this book, the subject of education will be explained more comprehensively. However here we need to focus on the education policy developed aiming at the youngsters in this situation. The existence of tribes that symbolize strong family ties is very nice and these tribes are the ornaments of our Southeast region. Overcoming the harm caused by the feudal system, one that compelled many youngsters in these tribes to go to the mountains, is not going to be possible by keeping the youth distant from religion but by providing them with an education based on the true values of Islam. Eliminating superstitious beliefs that have been falsely attached to religion, such as regarding women as second-class citizens, would not be possible with socialist approaches. Socialism will soon bring about communism and the practice of terror within the PKK mindset, and while societies were expecting equality, they would soon fall into the trouble of anarchy, injustice, poverty, fear, and

lovelessness. It is impossible for us to allow such a structure develop in front of our eyes in the Southeast.

Superstitions ingrained in society can only be abolished by completely understanding the real Islam as described in the Qur'an. To be able to succeed doing this, an education system that explains the concepts of the superiority of women, democracy, justice, and peace with the verses of the Qur'an should be developed in the Southeast. The facts that true Islam encourages values such as art, music, science and describes the most perfect form of democracy, denounces ethnocentric or racist attitudes and holds women in high esteem, the like of which they've never experienced in any other society, should be demonstrated. The youth who are given this education will be able to build an order based on respect and the Qur'an by keeping their own ties with their tribes and families and also upholding their faith with strength. Establishing this will be very easy for our new generation Kurdish youth so long as our state organizes the form of education in this sense.

Such an education would be a major blow to the PKK while ruling out the inequalities that push some of the youngsters in the Southeastern Turkey towards the PKK. With the education they will be given, religious youth would not only be equipped to counter the distorted ideology of the PKK but they would also never turn towards the PKK. Such an ideological background, as we will see the details soon, would be sufficient to render the PKK completely ineffective in such a way that they would not be able to hurt our people any more.

5. Alliance with the Iraqi Kurdish region and Iran

As we have previously stated in details, the names of four countries are mentioned within the dream of the West related to the foundation of a Great Kurdistan. Syria, which is one of these mentioned countries, was excluded in terms of alliance or various suggestions of cooperation as a result of the civil war and the environment of disorder that has plagued the country for years. However Iran and the Iraqi Kurdistan Autonomous Administration are two of our border neighbors with whom we have strong alliances. The PKK has dreams about establishing a communist Kurdistan on the lands of both of those two countries and the leaders of the two states are troubled by the existence of the PKK. These very important details turn those three countries into unique candidates for an alliance against the PKK. What Turkey should be doing in these circumstances is to establish a great, effective and strong unity, siding with Iran and Iraq against the PKK.

We have previously mentioned Iran's deterrent attitude against the PKK. Of course, it is not possible for us to approve the anti-democratic practices of Iran regarding this issue; however it is possible to forge a very strong alliance aiming to deter the PKK, particularly on the borders, one that should definitely be realized. When we look into history, we see that the times Iran and Turkey enjoyed a serious amity and these were also very tough times for the PKK. The times when relations between these two countries were at a standoff were conversely the times the PKK made use of as opportunities for new attacks. It means that the alliance of Iran with a strong state like Turkey intimidates the PKK.

This opportunity should be put to good use. With our army and our means, Turkey should make her alliance with Iran against the PKK be felt and moreover, should make it official with new strategic agreements by sharing intelligence information and it should be made possible for the PKK to estimate what any foolish moves would cost them. Such an alliance would be strong enough to singlehandedly put an end to all acts of the PKK.

With regards to the Iraqi Kurdish Autonomous Administration; both President Masoud Barzani and Prime Minister Nechervan Barzani are trustworthy people known for their religious personalities. It is very good that their ties with Turkey are strong; this togetherness should be reinforced with an even stronger friendship and alliance. Right now, it is a known fact that there is a serious influence of the PKK in the Iraqi Kurdish region and moreover that some of the Peshmerga became supporters of the PKK. From time to time, some threats aimed at Barzani come from the administrators of the PKK who are hiding in the caves in Mount Qandil. Through those threats, it is clear that they want to coerce Barzani. Furthermore the PKK has in the beginning of 2015 declared the land in which Yezidis are residing in the Iraqi Kurdish region as a canton in their own minds and Barzani issued a strong reaction to this situation. Barzani is again the one who adopted a serious attitude against the PKK during the air operations conducted by Turkey targeting Mount Qandil and he also declared an ultimatum to this terrorist organization demanding that they "vacate Kurdistan." On occasion, Barzani voices his complaints regarding the PKK and in an open or covert fashion expects Turkey's support.

Barzani made the following call to the Parliament and the Government of the Iraqi Kurdish Regional Administration regarding Duran Kalkan, one of the executives of the PKK, who made allegations about him:

*Take proper precautions against these formations that are in treason. Such formations are dangerous... Put an effort with all your might to silence this voice (Duran Kalkan). Choke the life out of these opinions that constitute the offense of treason. My call to the honorable people of Kurdistan is this: **Do not let such groups to gain a footing in Kurdistan.** These components in treason want to pick a civil war. **Do not allow these formations aiming to create instigation.** Put in the effort with all your might to defend Kurdistan and ensure the unity of our people.¹²⁶*

Clearly Barzani has concerns for the peace and unity of the Kurdish people and his autonomous region and describes the PKK as a virus that instigates corruption, disrupts unity and spreads terror. Beyond doubt, being under the supervision of the USA ever since its foundation is risky for the Iraqi Kurdistan Autonomous Administration; that is because the administration in question is unable to step out of the sanctions and conditions imposed by the USA and their free decisions are made under supervision. That is the reason why Iraqi Kurdish Autonomous Administration had to unnecessarily go into combat with ISIL in the region and the Peshmerga suffered devastating losses as a result of that combat. However alongside all these issues, the fact that USA has withdrawn from the region should be taken into consideration. In order to preserve the privileged status they have attained by means of the USA, the Iraqi Kurdish region needs the existence of a friendly and strong neighboring country. When these conditions are taken into consideration, it can be seen that Iraqi Kurdish Autonomous region needs the support of Turkey more than ever and every now and then Barzani voices this demand. Of course Barzani's security of life should be ensured primarily. Taking into account the peril facing Barzani, who is under constant threat by the PKK and who has had to deal with covert PKK

supporters within his army, it is both crucial and urgent that Turkish Special Forces and the MIT (Turkish National Intelligence Organization) should protect him.

Former CIA agent Graham Fuller, who said that the Great Middle East Project has turned into a disaster and confessed that Turkey's involvement in American plans would come to mean signing its death warrant, also made another accurate assertion; *"Turkey can solve the PKK problem if they can succeed to increase their dialogue with Iraqi Kurds."*¹²⁷

This substantially accurate and important assertion should definitely be taken into consideration. An alliance of the three border neighbors such as the Iraqi Kurdish Autonomous Administration, Iran and Turkey against the PKK, exhibiting all deterrent components against the PKK, sharing intelligence data and logistics support and making it felt that they are a significant threat against the PKK whenever possible would deter and silence the terrorists within a very short time. Turkey should take action to ensure this alliance at once and those three countries should act together in their struggle against the PKK.

6. Forming close alliances with the Western world based on solutions

Among the Western think tanks and politicians, especially in the USA, the existence of people who take the problems in the Middle East seriously as a problem of humanity and make a sincere effort to solve this matter is undoubtedly known. What should be called upon here is that the plans to divide the Middle East actually belong to a very small group of people. "Humanity" and "peace" are the points many politicians, bureaucrats and opinion leaders concentrate on. Consequently what is going on in the Middle East pains them as well and they try to make an effort for a solution.

Those people in question are those with whom we should be in alliance against this communist movement such as the PKK, which will bring about a horrifying disaster in the Middle East. Getting in touch with some names abroad, especially with those who have moderate and warm policies towards Muslims in the region and who look for solutions to the Middle East problem, is a must. Connections should be established with various non-governmental organizations and each and every one of them should be informed separately about the danger that is the PKK.

With the effective use of social media, editors, columnists, TV producers both in Turkey and abroad, should be contacted one by one. These people should be told about the dream of the PKK to establish a communist, materialist, autonomous state in the region and should be informed about the insidious, bloody acts they carry out to attain this dream. The facts that those PKK terrorists who put on a show as peace envoys towards certain segments of people abroad and at home are actually martyring our police officers and soldiers the first opportunity they get by laying ambushes in streets, who are perfidiously shooting police officers sleeping at their homes and are not even hesitating to attack women and children, should be explained thoroughly.

The harm that the disintegration of Turkey would bring about on the whole world should be explained and the fact that a communist based separatist movement starting from Turkey would

instigate a war and terror environment that would spread to all Islamic countries and then to all the continents in a domino effect, should be expounded. It should be kept in mind that many Westerners do not know the true nature of the PKK. The cost of strengthening a communist-Stalinist organization to the Middle East should definitely be set forth with the use of persuasive facts.

It should be taken into consideration that various difficulties will be faced while forging an alliance with the West and during the efforts for persuasion. Some people unaware of the fact of the PKK might resist these explanations. For that reason, hostile and racist discourses should be avoided and the situation should be explained by using kind, rational, patient, sincere, and moderate words. The intellectual substructure of the things that will be explained should be prepared and scientific methods should be employed. Romantic, weak explanations, bereft of evidence, that are not based on scientific and rational foundations, should strictly be avoided.

Sensible individuals in the West should be persuaded about the fact that instead of a "clash of civilizations", "the alliance of the good" will definitely bring about victory. It should be emphasized that Christians, Jews and Muslims should act in unison in the face of troubles and that Turkey is ready for such an alliance. The true Islam and the sufficiency of the Qur'an should be explained. It should be emphasized that our Middle East policy is a policy of peace reflecting the true spirit of Islam.

It should be reminded that although Turkey is a member of the NATO, the aforementioned organization does not carry out its due commitments. While the NATO accepts the calls for meetings when it comes to our country, it is substantially ignorant towards the fact that our country is under the threat of separation and is currently facing numerous terrorist attacks. The unjustified occupation of two countries -Afghanistan and Iraq- in the wake of a terrorist attack towards the US was accepted as normal. While that is the case, it should be shown to everyone that nothing tangible has ever been done against the terror organization that's been attacking Turkey for 40 years and that the related countries merely placed the organization into their list of terrorist organizations and that even this condition had been broken over the PYD/YPG. Consequently, the PKK terrorist organization is currently enjoying direct support of various institutions and deep states of the world and this should be made known to everyone.

7. The definitive solution is to collapse the ideology of the PKK!

Communism is the ideology of the PKK. The origin of communism is Marxism; and Marx defines what this ideology he developed uses as basis with the following sentence:

*(Referring to Charles Darwin's Origin of Species) This is the book which **contains the basis in natural history of our view.***¹²⁸

Darwin's book is very important and serves me as a basis in natural science for the class struggle in history.¹²⁹

It may be recalled that Öcalan defines himself as the "Lenin of our times" and puts the techniques of Stalin into practice. Stalin, whom Öcalan regards as a guide, explains the basis of his practices as follows:

*In order to cleanse the minds of young generations from the notion of creation, **we need to teach them only one thing: The teachings of Darwin.***¹³⁰

As can be seen, the common point that attracts attention is Darwin's theory of evolution. This theory has been taken as a starting point for communism and communist leaders have always espoused the spreading of the concept of evolution. As we have mentioned in great detail in the previous sections, Öcalan is a Darwinist and he has shaped the PKK organization upon this ideology.

The acts of terror that are carried out in our country right now, and the horrible massacres that have taken place in countries such as Soviet Union, China, Cambodia, Vietnam and Korea in the past have always taken this single ideology as basis: The theory of evolution. That means the following; if the theory of evolution collapses, then concepts such as dialectic materialism and communalistic systems that communism takes as its basis would disappear and the notions suggesting "the strong crushing the weak" and "the struggle for survival in nature" will be abolished and thus, the terror and anarchy that communism mandates will not be able to find a basis. We have "bad news" for communists; the theory of evolution is a fallacy.

Darwinist education is the first training the PKK gives to the militants in the mountains. After that, propaganda studies about the association of Darwinism-communism is carried out and as a result of this one-sided education given to them, terrorist activities, killing people or going to their own deaths becomes quite easy for these people. The communist ideology should be annihilated to put an end to this terror organization and that can only be possible by explaining the fact that Darwinism is a fallacy. However, while Darwinist education is being given in our schools to our own children as a part of the official curriculum (this has been explained in detail in the previous section) attending to our own children at home will be difficult, let alone giving the correct education to the PKK militants in the mountains. May God forbid, the settling of a communist, terrorist mindset in our society, which currently is complaining about the widespread use of violence, terror, intolerance, hatred and aggression would become shockingly easy within this education system. Consequently, our youth is really not prepared to fight against the PKK, in the ideological sense. Since they are given the same erroneous education as the PKK militants receive in their schools and because they never received the correct education in any aspect, they do not have the necessary background for an ideological struggle against the PKK.

Certainly, the Darwinist dictatorship is a violent structure and just as it is influential in all other countries, it is also influential in our country as well. Therefore making changes in the curriculum might not be very easy. The authorities might be unable to find a way out about this matter. However, the following method can nevertheless be followed:

They can continue to teach the theory of evolution as a part of general culture at schools; we have no objection to that. However, adding various courses that provide scientific responses to this theory to the curriculum or teaching these responses in lessons currently present in the curriculum is crucially important. This point will be left at the students' discretion and the students will only be presented with many fossil examples that were excavated from different layers of the geological stratum. Scientific evidences that demonstrate why a protein cannot come into existence as a result of coincidences in muddy water will be explained. Scientific outcomes will be expounded saying, "Evolution suggests that a living cell comes into existence on its own through coincidences, while scientific experiments, on the other hand, prove the

contrary". That will not be a lesson on Creation. It will only be presenting scientific evidences while giving information on the evolutionary frauds in biology lessons; that will be all.

Apart from all this, it is imperative to develop a special educational program particularly for our Southeast region. Giving a meaningful anti-communist education to the local community and ensuring that this education reaches the terrorists in the mountains as well is the only effective path. In order to be able to do that, distributing books and brochures explaining the fact that Darwinism and communism do not have a foundation in terms of its ideology with scientific evidences, giving conferences, preparing television programs and carrying out enlightening educational programs are of crucial importance. We need to reach the people of the Southeast, especially with TV programs; the television channels belonging to the state should be facilitated in this respect. This education mobilization should urgently be carried out through TRT and TRT Kurdi channels. [For further details of the education programs that should be followed, see *The Danger of a Communist Kurdistan* by Harun Yahya (full text is available on the internet at <http://www.harunyahya.com/en/books/162394>)]

Communist terror will not come to an end without education

It should not be forgotten that every deterrent means possible can be used against communist terror, but their underlying ideology is the reason why communists take up arms. Peace agreements, mutual negotiations or deterrent methods can never give definitive results unless their ideology is refuted. No communist uprising has ever been soothed through negotiations. Those who attempt to give the IRA in Ireland or ETA in Spain as an example in our day are gravely mistaken. The terror in our country is based on the dream of establishing a communist Kurdistan and unless an educational policy is initiated, it will not come to an end before they reach that goal.

Our youth should be educated against the communist threat and should learn what they are up against and with which scientific methods they will be able to annihilate this. Our brothers in the Southeast should have a grasp of scientific data that would refute the Darwinist-communist danger, and by getting to know the true understanding of Islam as depicted in the Qur'an, they should free themselves from the bigotry and superstitions brought about by the radical mindset. A policy of education, particularly aimed at our Southeast region, is of crucial importance. This policy of education should advance with a policy of love aimed towards our brothers in the region. This education should be given together with the love of our state and of our people.

Educators having a self-righteous or arrogant appearance would create grave disadvantages. It should not be forgotten that this truth lies at the root of the long-standing unrest of the Kurdish youth. All our citizens are equal in every aspect in this country and anyone claiming superiority over another would only be displaying his own profound ignorance. Consequently, education should definitely be presented to the people of the Southeast along with the love that they long for.

The oppression our people in the Southeast have suffered over the years is a dire situation that we know full well and we are all too familiar with the results. Even though our Kurdish

brothers have suffered a great deal over the years, this is certainly a mistake that could be easily redeemed. That should never be forgotten.

The following chapter is allocated to this important matter.

Chapter 7

Understanding Our Kurdish Brothers' Problems

Deep state services are at the heart of almost all countries, strong or weak, more or less developed. States' decisions, policies, demands and war and peace are always in the hands of these services. While such a powerful country as the U.S. is currently implementing a Middle East and great Kurdistan policy under the influence of deep state services, Iran is regarded as a threat by some Middle Eastern Sunnis because of this deep state policy, while the civil war in Syria is resistant to solution due to the involvement of the Russian, Chinese and Iranian deep state services. Countries and heads of states are generally so powerless over such decision-making mechanisms that their non-politicized expressions of conscience are generally totally at variance with actual policy measures. That is because they have to do what they are told by those services in the policy arena.

The history of Turkey is one in which these sinister deep state systems have operated in the most terrifying, cold and ruthless manner. The pressures on various sections of society in this period were unrelenting, and unsolved killings continued unabated. The puppet system totally dominated the state, and the Ergenekon deep state apparatus began propelling the country in an irreligious and fascistic direction.

The unraveling over the previous decade of this terror organization that had wormed its way into the state came as a breath of fresh air to the country. Unsolved killings largely came to an end, the pressures on the devout section of society were largely lifted and violence against various ethnic groups decreased. However, it is still not possible to say that the deep deep apparatus in Turkey has been totally eradicated. It is even possible to say that this system still makes its presence felt through various individuals who have infiltrated the judicial system or the media. However, the old way of thinking has to a large extent been defeated, and the pressures on the people of the country have declined.

In the past, the ugly face of the Ergenekon deep state apparatus made itself felt in a variety of ways, and there is no doubt that our Kurdish brothers were one of the communities that felt its weight most harshly. In order to rectify this, we need to understand their sufferings.

Kurds caught at crossfire

Following the collapse of the Ottoman Empire, the Kurdish people dispersed between Iraq, Syria and Turkey (divided into four parts together with those in Iran) and experienced various pressures and difficulties. Saddam in Iraq and al-Assad in Syria, or Ba'athist regimes in other

words, implemented repressive policies aimed at eliminating the Kurds. Saddam inflicted mass killings by the use of chemical weapons, while al-Assad refused to grant the Kurds their rights and freedoms, refused to give them identity documents and regarded them as non-people. In Turkey, meanwhile, at times when the deep state mindset was ascendant, Alawites, devout believers and conservatives as well as our Kurdish citizens were all harshly repressed.

The 1990s were one of the most difficult periods for the Southeast of Turkey, when the PKK terror organization threatened and oppressed our Kurdish brothers. Everyone also knows that this was a time when the deep state apparatus replaced the official state authority in the Southeast and inflicted terror through practices that were never put down on paper. This was a time when even tribes fighting against the PKK came under suspicion, when village guards appointed by the state were suspected of being PKK agents and tortured many times by deep state officials, and when people with brothers, sons or daughters up in the mountains were persecuted, even though they were themselves opposed to the PKK.

This was a time when even the families of the village guards who were constantly harassed by the PKK, being targets of PKK bullets, were also being targeted by the deep state apparatus although they were risking their lives for the country and for God's sake. Some of the many Kurdish citizens who were taken from their homes without due process were never heard of again, while others underwent horrendous interrogations for days on end. This was a time when brother shot brother, when countless unsolved killings took place and when Turkey suffered billions of dollars'-worth of material losses.

Illegal organizations set up by deep state services by making illicit use of state powers, engaged in constant oppression and mistreatment of the people of the region. These gangs that wormed their way into the body of the state literally behaved like the state itself, but they used the authority of that state for their own interests and engaged in all kinds of illegal activities in the region. So much so that, according to village guards of the time, it was these individuals and organizations that inflicted the worst damage on the fight against terror.¹³¹ In one sense it was the activities of these organizations that made it impossible to put an end to terror.

There was no state presence in the Southeast of Turkey at that time. The innocent Kurdish people were caught between a rock and a hard place. There was no institution to which they could complain of the mistreatment and injustices they suffered. Those seeking redress were faced with threats and maltreatment. Public offices had become places of bribery and corruption under the auspices of the deep state apparatus.¹³² Yet people had nowhere to complain even about that. The freedom of the media was tightly circumscribed under pressure from the deep state apparatus in question, as a result of which the murders, unsolved killings, illegitimate detentions, persecution and other problems in the region all remained hidden.

Deep state organizations then began raiding villages in the region under various pretexts. Inhabitants of villages would be gathered in the main square, threatened, and often taken away for no reason. The same villages would also be raided by PKK militants at night, suffering another sort of persecution at the hands of PKK. The ruthless members of the PKK would spread the organization's propaganda, collect money through intimidation and execute people they regarded as spies or agents. The state was not there for our devout Kurdish people at the very time when they needed it the most, when they were subjected to the worst injustices.

The Ergenekon terror organization was capable of declaring a state of emergency in whichever region it chose by keeping Turkey a place where turmoil could break out at any moment. Villages were evacuated and burned by the Ergenekon terror organization under the pretext of the war against terror, and hundreds of thousands of our Kurdish citizens were forced to leave their places of residence. The fact that Kurds were forced to live under primitive conditions in cities such as Mersin, Adana, Ankara, and Istanbul, to which they migrated, was also a ready tool for PKK propaganda and played a significant role in the PKK organizing itself in the cities.

Several Kurdish intellectuals or opinion leaders were illegally detained or assassinated. It is a known fact that the majority of these incidents were organized in collaboration between Ergenekon and the PKK.

While the deep state apparatus was deliberately neglecting the region it was the PKK that appeared under the guise of a savior of the people offering work and other opportunities. The region had deliberately been left in a backward socioeconomic state, and its people had knowingly been abandoned to poverty, wretchedness and ignorance. As a result, the people of the region were deceived by "black propaganda" using the limited means of communication available and the state was literally portrayed as "a fascist power that wants to annihilate the Kurdish people".

Right from the very outset the objective of the Ergenekon terror organization has been to break Turkey up, split our beloved Kurdish brothers away from us and establish a communist Kurdistan separate from Turkey. It therefore sought to alienate the Kurdish people by pressuring them, and it expected that they would demand to break away from Turkey because of that pressure. However, this sinister deep state apparatus underestimated the Kurdish people's faithful character and loyalty to the country and the nation. Even when they were being most neglected by their own state - under the influence of the deep state apparatus - these fine people never lost their belief in that state and never even considered breaking away from it. The Ergenekon terror organization's intended plans for the Kurdish people thus ended in failure, and it suffered a grave defeat it had never envisaged.

Our Kurdish brothers need to know that we are not unaware of what was going on in the Southeast at that time. We are well aware that our Kurdish brothers were exposed to severe pressures, subjected to extraordinary injustices, unjustly lost members of their families, and had to deal with the triggermen of the deep state at the same time as struggling with the sinister scourge of the PKK. We are also aware of the poverty to which they were subjected, of the pressures within their families and tribes and of the sufferings caused by the feudal system. We are cognizant of the efforts to eradicate the Kurdish language and that a fierce war was waged against Kurdish culture and traditions. In proposing solutions for our Kurdish brothers and speaking out against the PKK, we are acting in the full knowledge of all these truths.

We are similarly aware that it was the injustices they suffered more than communist propaganda that influenced young people's decisions to join the PKK, and that after heading up into the mountains some of these young people were never able to return because of pressure. Many young people say that they only subsequently realized that the terror organization is Stalinist, communist and atheist. We are also fully aware that there are some young Kurds living in the Southeast and various other parts of the country who harbor a great anger and resentment against the state and Turkishness because of the way they or their parents were

maltreated by the illegal bodies of the deep state apparatus. Unlike some people, we have not closed our eyes or disregarded all this. Our Kurdish brothers must not forget this very important point – our aim here is to find a solution to all these problems.

Differentiating between Kurds and the PKK

Let us first emphasize one fact that some of the world's superpowers and even some people in Turkey insist on ignoring; the Kurds and the PKK are two very different entities. The Kurd is radiant, polite, honorable and of good character. The PKK, however, stands for cowardliness, treachery and degeneration. Accusing a Kurd of being a member of the PKK is one of the worst possible insults, and the worst possible imputation against our Kurdish brothers' nobility and character.

People who are unaware of or deny this generally regard the Marxist PKK as a "Kurdish resistance movement" and think of it as a movement that encapsulates all the people of the Southeast. This is totally misleading and grossly unfair. As we have already seen, it is an organization that in fact targets our Kurdish brothers. It has built an empire of fear on the backs of the Kurds. Indeed, the great majority of our troops who defend the motherland against the PKK, and almost all the village guards, are themselves Kurds. They risk their own lives to protect their homelands against the PKK for God's sake.

To give the impression that all Kurds support the PKK, are a separate people from Turkey and are absolutely opposed to the Turkish state is a form of social engineering that has been implemented through our Kurdish brothers for a long time now. The aim here is to give the impression that a handful of communists engaged in terror attacks and our innocent people that might be of Kurdish origin or those living in the East of the country are one and the same. This is intended to create a climate of hatred and hostility toward our Kurdish brethren all across the country.

The effort to portray the Kurds and the PKK as one and the same is a very cunning and dangerous tactic. Kurds in various parts of Turkey have been attacked for "being members of the PKK". These attacks have been turned into an invaluable propaganda tool for the PKK. The people of the region have been given the impression that "The Turks do not want you, they are your enemies". This has prepared fertile ground for the PKK.

The great majority of our Kurdish citizens in the Southeast are loyal to the death to their country and very fine and devout people with all the moral virtues of Anatolia, and that is a fact that cannot be ignored. May God forbid, if a referendum were to be held in the region, in a manner in which there were no threats of violence or the use of arms, the Kurds would be the first people to refuse to see the country broken up. A report concerning the Kurdish problem by Dr. Salih Akyürek from the Wise Men Center for Strategic Studies (BILGESAM) revealed that more than 90% of the people of the region were opposed to autonomy or federation. Kurdish and Zaza citizens were asked, "Would independence for the Kurds in Turkey be a solution to the Kurdish problem?" and 90.1% of Kurdish citizens answered "No", saying that they did not want

independence. Asked "Would the Kurds being given federative rights lead to a permanent solution to the Kurdish problem?", 92.7% of Kurdish citizens said. "No".¹³⁴

Since the PKK is also aware of this fact, it is trying to establish dominion over the people by way of intimidation, aggression and pressure. It is therefore essential to strongly oppose the idea spread by some circles, and particularly the PKK, that Kurds=PKK and to defend our dear Kurdish brothers' rights down to the bitter end. It is absolutely essential to differentiate between Kurds and the PKK and to clearly and determinedly disseminate the distinction. This information must be disseminated in a determined manner, particularly in Western communities, and people must be told of the differences between the devout, spiritual, well-mannered and noble Kurdish people and the cowardly communist organization that is the PKK.

There can be no solution without love

The pains of the past have without doubt left deep scars. Looking at the present, however, the important thing is this; the climate of lovelessness and insecurity that has grown up can be rectified. However, that is only possible through love and freedoms.

Since the Kurds are religious, deep and well-mannered by nature, they are also a very noble people. They are radiant and honest. They attach great importance to humanity and friendship, and have an immaculate conception of respect. They live by the moral values of Anatolia in the most perfect manner. Such virtuous people therefore deserve to be treated in the best way under all conditions and circumstances.

The Turkish government and public have different responsibilities on this subject. The government and public need to develop a special language prioritizing the Kurds in order to redeem the sufferings of the past. The love the Kurds never received in the past must now be shown to them by everyone. That is how to pay the debt from the past.

The responsibility of the government

Before turning to recommendations on this subject, it needs to be made clear that throughout the 13 years of AKP rule, between 2002 and 2015, the party signed up to major new policies for the Southeast, policies which had never been implemented previously. In summary:

- The state of emergency was lifted.
- Obstacles to citizens giving Kurdish names to their children were lifted.
- Party closures were made more difficult.
- The ban on Kurdish-language broadcasting was lifted.
- Kurdish-language courses were permitted.
- Radio and TV broadcasts in different languages and dialects were permitted.
- Advertising in different languages and dialects was permitted.
- TRT 6 began 24-hour Kurdish-language broadcasting.

- The name TRT 6 was changed to TRT Kurdi on 10 January 2015.
- Private TV and radio organizations were permitted to broadcast 24 hours a day in foreign languages.
- Universities were permitted to open departments, institutes and elective classes in foreign languages. Departments of Kurdish language and literature were opened.
- Universities were allowed to establish Kurdish studies libraries.
- The decision was taken to support cultural activities in different languages. Kurdish-language films were supported.
- Detainees in prisons were allowed to enjoy mother-tongue family visits.
- Call centers were allowed to provide services for non-Turkish speaking citizens.
- Settlements were allowed to readopt their former Kurdish names.
- Political propaganda in different languages was permitted.
- Various important Kurdish-language works were published by the Ministry of Culture and Tourism.
- Mountain pastures were reopened for use, and people began returning to the villages.
- The Kurdish language appeared in parliamentary documents for the first time.
- A commission of inquiry was set up to look into incidents in Diyarbakır Prison.
- Permission was given for Kurdish-language stage plays to be performed.
- Kurdish-language music albums were brought out.
- Local religious figures were allowed to be employed by the state.
- Defendants were allowed to present their defenses in their mother tongue.
- The Turkish Language Institute published a Turkish-Kurdish dictionary.
- The Anadolu News Agency began publishing in Kurdish.
- On March 8th, 2015 the government announced a Southeast Anatolia Project (GAP) action plan. The plan involves 115 projects with a budget of 26.7 billion aimed at regenerating the Southeast, in fields from agriculture to tourism and from education to health.
- The Holy Qur'an was published in Kurdish.
- Large numbers of dams, airports, hospitals and schools were built in the region.
- Dozens of laws were amended in terms of democratization and the Peace Process.

These matters alone make it very clear that historic progress and major advances were made. The current government has adopted very different measures than the governments that have gone before it, made major steps toward improving the well being of our Kurdish brothers and stood up for Kurdish rights. These advances apply not just to the Kurds, but also to all other ethnic groups living in Turkey, as well as Alawites and other minorities. These are all sources of pleasure and pride. They are also a requirement of greater democratization. In addition to all this progress, efforts also need to be made to fill a deficiency inherited from the past; that deficiency

is love. Alawites, Greeks, Armenians, Jews, Christians, in short all ethnic and faith groups that were once neglected, must be included in this policy of love in order to make up for the past. Since our subject here is the Kurds, however, we shall be looking at this matter separately.

The building of roads, airports and bridges in the Southeast of Turkey of course represents important progress. It is even more important, however, to win the hearts and minds of the Kurdish people. Activities based on a policy of love must be arranged for that purpose, and our Kurdish brothers must be made to feel they are both protected and loved by the state. As can be seen from the steps taken by the Turkish government concerning the rights and liberties of our Kurdish brothers, we fully believe that this policy of love will be put into operation as a matter of urgency. However, the priority issue on this subject is for PKK terror and terrorists to be eliminated from the region. Although various measures are being taken today, all the terrorists in the region need to be caught and detained through a more wide-ranging and organized campaign. This is essential for the security of the people of the region.

We also need to pay attention to another important point; great care must be taken that the governors and officials appointed to the provinces of the Southeast by central government are not arrogant, proud, haughty, loveless or lacking in empathy. Such people must not be appointed, and if any are identified they must be immediately removed from their posts. Governors who reflect the love and affection of the state, who smile and are respectful and full of love, who are wise and driven, who are well-mannered and high-quality, who know how to praise beauties and do not look down their noses at the person in front of them must be appointed. The government must engage in a range of activities in these regions in order to weld the population together. It must contribute to their education and in such areas as art and science, and it must make the people feel the love and backing of the state at every moment.

The idea of Kurdish governors for Kurdish regions must also be abandoned, and any impression of isolating the Kurds as an ethnic group must be eliminated. Care must be taken to weld everyone together in a single nation by also appointing Kurdish governors to other parts of the country and governors from other parts of the country must be appointed to the Southeastern provinces.

It would also be a good thing for the government to support various civil society organizations in the region so they can act freely and effectively, as well as local religious leaders, tribal leaders, local radio and TV stations and intellectuals who advocate Islamic Unity against the communist and the fascist philosophy with a language of love.

It is important for conferences, films and documentaries to be held and produced concerning national unity and brotherhood with the help of that backing. Policies encouraging people to think about God, the Qur'an, signs leading to faith, the miracles of the Qur'an, science, art, quality, culture and love must be adopted, rather than cultural bigotry. A major mobilization by way of the internet and media is needed for that to happen.

Mobilization aimed at encouraging the idea of a Great Turkey and Islamic Union must take place in the social media, through love and a peaceable, modern, high-quality vision. There must be no room for lack of quality, lovelessness, hatred or fanaticism, nor for nonsense and later fabrications.

All TV and radio channels affiliated to The Radio and Television Supreme Council (RTUK) must take part in this mobilization.

When Saddam was persecuting the Kurds, when al-Assad was committing slaughter or when the PYD was suppressing them, it was always Turkey that stepped in to protect them. All their needs were met in an honest and proper manner. Our Kurdish brothers from Kobane have been given a proper welcome in Turkey. All these facts must be set out in detail with full supporting historical information and documentation. People have to be told persistently that the loveless attitude of the past toward our Kurdish citizens derived from the twin scourges of the Ergenekon terror organization and the PKK, with their very different aims. Our Kurdish brothers need to feel that they are always under the protection of the Turkish state and nation.

The responsibilities of the Turkish people

Some people who describe themselves as "White Turks" hide behind that term to engage in horrifyingly racist rhetoric, under which not only the Kurds but also other ethnic groups are unwanted.

Racism is a mental disturbance that goes far beyond mere ignorance. Everyone in the world is descended from the Prophet Adam (pbuh), and everyone is therefore created equal. People who adhere to the mindset that regards itself as superior, under the influence of Darwinism or for other reasons, are both ignorant enough to believe in the nonsense of Darwinism and also sufficiently ill to speak words of hate deriving from it. It is therefore wrong to think of someone who engages in racism as normal and rational and to have any dealings with him.

Our Almighty Lord reveals in the holy Qur'an that superiority lies solely in piety, not in ethnicity:

Mankind! We created you from a male and female, and made you into peoples and tribes so that you might come to know each other. The noblest among you in God's Sight is the one with the most piety. God is All-Knowing, All-Aware. (Quran, 49:13)

Some people who describe themselves as "White Turks" and who regard Kurdish culture and identity as unbecoming, whose eyes and souls have been atrophied by pride and arrogance, and who imagine that superiority can be endowed by material possessions and education, would like Turkey to consist of its Western areas only and foolishly see nothing wrong in the Southeast breaking away. These people care not one jot whether our Kurdish brothers fall into the clutches of the communists and end up being oppressed. So long as nothing untoward happens to them, they will remain stewing in their own selfishness and living a loveless life in their materialist world.

It must not be forgotten that some of these "White Turks" behave in an arrogant and condescending way, not only toward our Kurdish brothers, but to all the minorities in the country, but even toward the poor and the rural classes, toward people with a low level of education and even toward the sick and disabled. The main reason for this is surely the terribly negative state of mind and weakness of conscience caused by the materialist mindset to which they have fallen

prey. These people are the ones that actually suffer from the loveless spirit they have, as this lack of love inside them hurt themselves.

It is also the case that the people whose views we have outlined above do not represent the majority of the Turkish population. The majority of our people are aware that Kurdish people are a very superior society in terms of honesty, nobility and decency. The honorable nature of the Kurds is a role model for the entire nation, and these brothers of ours represent the very loftiest moral virtues. They never lie, never do anything dishonorable and never make the slightest concession when it comes to honesty. The experience of suffering down the years is a fine teacher, and this makes them best able to exhibit kindness and love toward others who are suffering. The Kurds are therefore many times more worthy than many other people.

The responsibility of our nation is to stand up for the Kurds in such a way as to neutralize the claims and demands of the "White Turks". Through the love they display, their writings and campaigns in the social media, people can easily neutralize the evil ideas of this loveless minority. Our people must work to show that they share the sufferings of the Kurds down the years and that they are actively opposed to the PKK and the evil apparatuses of the deep state.

The responsibility of our Kurdish brothers is to attach no credence to the words and ideas of this foolish minority. God will always cause the truth to reign. Those who are cruel, heedless of their weakness in the Sight of God and who behave arrogantly will inevitably be defeated under the law of God. Our Kurdish brothers must therefore continue to behave properly and honestly and always collaborate with the goods. There are many true and honest people of good conscience in the country who advocate the rights of the Kurds.

It must not be forgotten that every suffering can only be rectified through love and greater liberty. We are ready to act to make that restitution through love and liberty. We will employ all the means at our disposal for that purpose. What is now needed is a brand new beginning in alliance with all people of love. Islamic Unity is a great cause that will include everyone, regardless of ethnicity and religion. Our Kurdish brothers must share that cause with us, and we must together build a new age of justice and tranquility, where the wicked have no power and no injustices remain.

As our Lord reveals:

... By His Words God wipes out the false and confirms the truth. He knows what the heart contains. (Qur'an, 42:24)

Chapter 8

The Time For The Salvation Of The World Is Near

The time for the salvation of the world that is shaken with scourges, wars and iniquity is close at hand. We need to do the utmost of what we can and pray for it and we must show patience and perseverance by putting trust in our Lord.

Before pointing out the ways of solving these matters, we feel we must remind some Westerners who dream of a Greater Kurdistan in the Middle East and our Kurdish brothers who have been oppressed under hardship and duress for years. These reminders should definitely be taken into consideration.

A reminder to the Western world

We have a reminder for those who assume that backing the PKK would serve the schemes over the Middle East: Although you receive the support of all the advanced imperialist countries, the incidents will most likely not develop as you expect. As we discussed in details in the previous pages of the book, the region in question would serve as an opening to a communist world state. Communism will soon show its face of violence, and with the backing of all the world's communists, that step forward which has been planned for a long time would be taken. In one way, albeit reluctantly, the capitalist world, which is in an anti-communist alliance, would be establishing a communist world state with its very own hands. America's struggles in Korea and Vietnam, the Cold War it had waged for four decades, would have been entirely in vain.

The true nature of the PKK in Turkey, the PYD in Syria and the PJAK in Iran should be correctly understood; if their actual missions are not taken into consideration and, despite all the warnings made, a perilous scheme ends up being hatched in this key location of the Middle East, would open the door to a great disaster for the entire world.

The target of communists has always been to establish a state on a strategic, yet at the same time, extremely vulnerable territory by which they can continue spreading their ideology to the wider world. With the support of the imperialist powers, they are gradually approaching this target. The imperialist powers must not support a horrendous system that will ultimately strike them. In our time, there are such developments in the Middle East that baffle us. A communist state that emerges in line with such a plan would, in an unexpected way, gain strength and terrorize the world. In such a situation, the West would not have the luxury to say, "No matter what happens in the Middle East, let's keep silent", because – may God forbid- the scourge will be global in nature. It is surely not something that we would like for such violence to spread to

the Middle East or to the Western world, but within the bounds of current facts, this is the probable scenario and it is vital to make a necessary warning about this peril. The objective here is not to present a gloomy picture but to open minds.

A reminder to our Kurdish brothers

Albeit on justified grounds, rage is a feeling that hinders rational and accurate thinking and, most importantly, something that displeases God. Our Kurdish brothers, who are unable to purge the rage in their hearts because of what they experienced in the past, must ponder over this fact sincerely and make a new start to eliminate the scourge of the PKK and be united as a strong nation. Together with their brothers who love them and reach out with helping hands to them, they must struggle for a unity of community and peace in which all religions and races coexist, in which bigotry and superstitions are purged. This is the kind of unity based upon real democracy and justice prescribed by the Qur'an. Together with sincere Muslims, our Kurdish brothers must engage in a cultural and ideological struggle to remove the scourge of the terrorist PKK that tries to separate Turkey and our Kurdish brothers from the Islamic world in order to receive the value Kurds deserve. This ideological struggle is vital to eliminate all sorts of dangerous opinions and illegal organizations that afflict them and not to face such scourges once again. What we need to do, together with our Kurdish brothers whom we love dearly, is to establish a Unity of Islam in which the glorious soul of Islam is experienced. This unity in which societies, nations, countries and people will coexist together must be established as soon as possible.

The Unity of Islam, but how?

Both the Western societies which are currently experiencing Islamophobia and some of our Kurdish brothers, who have been distanced from the religion for a long time, feel concerned when they hear the phrase, "the Islamic Union." They assume that under the name of Islam, a plague of bigotry will spread all over the world, democracy will be eliminated and the members of other religions or atheists will be massacred. They also believe that women will be persecuted both physically and spiritually in every aspect of life, that world will be drowned in blood and an environment of war will persist. However, this is not the description of Islam, but the description of bigotry. The Unity of Islam that will be established as a result of practicing the real Islam will be a perfect one with amazing attributes: Wars will come to an end, women will be held in high esteem, all societies and religions will coexist in peace, democracy and freedom will dominate and, on the condition that countries keep their borders intact, all borders will be opened. This will not be a unity of only the Islamic countries, but also of China, Russia, Israel, the USA, the European countries and all the other countries of the world. Joy and peace will prevail throughout this unity; hostilities will come to an end, starvation, fear, scarcity and poverty will be eliminated. Massacres committed in the name of Islam, bigotry and radicalism can be eradicated if - and only if - this unity, which will be established under the roof of the genuine Islam, is established. This is the *sole* method to eradicate radicalism. Under these circumstances, in a pursuit of real democracy, the system that the USA, the other countries of the world and our precious Kurdish brothers must seek must be this one.

The objective of the PKK is to dominate the Eastern borders of Turkey and to separate Turkey from the Islamic world. In this way, they aim to hinder the establishment of the Islamic Union that will save the entire world from great scourges; consequently the PKK strives hard to hinder peace from prevailing around the world. It is very important for both Western societies and our Kurdish brothers to be highly aware of this.

If the Western world indeed aims for world peace and the eradication of the peril of radicalism, then it must support the Unity of Islam - that we defined previously - that is based on the conception of democracy, which exists in the essence of the Qur'an. If our Kurdish brothers want to get rid of the injustice, racism and communist terror that have been ongoing for years, they also need to advocate the Unity of Islam, which is based on the justice God describes in the Qur'an. By God's leave, this unity will certainly come into existence and peace will certainly reign the world. Yet our Almighty Lord wants us to struggle for it and to eliminate all sorts of mischief with an ideological struggle. To this end, both the leaders of the Western World and our Kurdish brothers must ally with genuine Muslims who only abide by the Qur'an and be aware that the actual way out can be secured with this alliance.

Glad Tidings of the coming of Hazrat Mahdi (Pbuh)

A fact to be known is this: The true Islamic understanding which will bring with it democracy, love and friendship will certainly eradicate radicalism and superstition from the world. And it will be Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) who will make this real. According to the hadith and accounts and commentaries of the Torah and the Gospels that are in line with the hadith, the era that we live in is the time of the emergence of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh). The fact that almost all of the signs narrated in the hadith regarding the End Times have miraculously come true within a short frame of time is explicit evidence that we live in the End Times in which Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) will come. You may read about all the signs that have actualized and the evidence proving that we live in the time of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) in the book: *The Prophet Jesus (as) and Hazrat Mahdi (as) will Come this Century* by Harun Yahya¹³⁵

Upon the emergence of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) all religious innovations and superstitions that began to be widely practiced throughout the world after the demise of the Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) will be wiped out and the world will attain security and peace as it exists in the essence of the Qur'an.

Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) is a person of peace who refrains from any kind of war and conflict. He will cause good ethics to prevail in the world by remembering God and by love, not by wars. In the time of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) wars will come to an end and people will turn to love and peace; not even a nose will bleed during his time. This fact has been related by many hadith:

*People will seek refuge in the Mahdi as honey bees cluster around their sovereign. He will fill the world that was once full of cruelty, with justice. He will fill the world that was once full of cruelty, with justice. His justice will be as such that HE WILL NOT WAKE A SLEEPING PERSON or EVEN SHED ONE DROP OF BLOOD. The Earth will return to the age of happiness.*¹³⁶

Those who swear allegiance to him [the Mahdi] will swear allegiance between the Corner and the Maqam [near the Kaaba]. THEY WILL NOT WAKEN THE SLEEPER, AND THEY WILL NEVER SHED BLOOD.¹³⁷

The time of the emergence of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) is also the time of the second coming of the Prophet Jesus (pbuh). In this period the fact that all weapons will fall silent and wars will come to an end, and that peace, love and justice will rule the world following the coming of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) and the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is related as follows in the hadith:

War (competents) will lay down its burden (arms and the like).

Enmity and hatred between people will cease... Like the cup fills with water, so will earth fill with peace... There will be religious unity. Nobody but God will be worshipped. War will put down its burden.¹³⁹

There will be no enmity left between any people. And all hostility, fighting, and envy will definitely disappear.¹⁴⁰

Hazrat Mahdi's (pbuh) coming is a glad tiding not only for Muslims, Jews and Christians but also for the whole of humanity. Upon his coming the world will fill with justice and people will find the love, peace and abundance they are looking for. All the incidents of horror and violence we are now witnessing are events that are expected prior to Hazrat Mahdi's (pbuh) coming. Even the appearance of the PKK in this period, which is the topic of this book, is foretold in the hadith:

*There will be AROUND THE EUPHRATES, near Ash-Sham or a little after it, a great assembly (of armies). They will fight each other over wealth, and SEVEN OUT OF EVERY NINE WILL BE KILLED. And that will be after the Al-Hadda (powerful, hammering sound) and the Al-Wahiya (catastrophe) in the month of Ramadan, and after the split resulting in **THREE BANNERS**, each will seek the kingship (reign) for himself, **AMONG THEM IS A MAN WHOSE NAME IS ABDULLAH.**¹⁴¹*

As the hadith explicitly states, there is an army that battles for wealth around the river Euphrates and it causes a serious loss of lives. Just as it is stated in the hadith, the PKK have different flags in different countries. Another detail that draws attention is that the name of PKK's leader, Abdullah Öcalan, is precisely foretold in the hadith.

Subsequent to the emergence of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) neither the scourge of the PKK nor the other elements that have turned the world into a picture of violence and horror will remain. The time is very close at hand when the world will turn into a place of peace and prosperity. God wants our prayers, our determination and our wisdom to be able to struggle against evil. Prior to the coming of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh), God wants us to make an intellectual struggle to warn those groups that are under the influence of erroneous ideologies and superstition. Surely our Lord has the power to create this beautiful environment with a single order from Him, yet the difficulties and intellectual struggles that are lived before the coming of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh) are significant for us to be able to appreciate the beauty of the golden age in the world's coming era, to be worthy of our Lord's blessings and above all, to gain the consent of our Lord.

Conclusion

While the Ottoman Empire went down in history, many states wanted to have their share from the boundaries of the National Pact determined by Atatürk. Some of them wanted to invade Istanbul but couldn't get through Çanakkale. Some of them reached Adana, Mersin, Antep, Maraş, Urfa but they were beaten back. Others were pushed back from İzmir following a huge defeat. Even in its most difficult times, the Turkish nation has never avoided struggle and has always been ready to lay down their lives to keep the integrity of the homeland. Indeed, the Turkish soldiers who withstood the filthy, insidious and treacherous ambushes of the PKK and have laid down their lives over the last forty years are the greatest evidence for it. If the ones who backstabbed and hatched schemes were not allowed to succeed, it is, by God's leave, because of the resolute stance of the soldiers of the Turkish army and the police officers who are willing to lay down their lives. Following the defeat it suffered during the WWI, the Turkish nation waged the War of Independence under the direst conditions with very little manpower. What the deep states, who dream about a Kurdistan which will never be established, have failed to recognize one simple fact: That the Turkish nation, the Turkish soldiers and the Turkish police officers have always been very sensitive when it comes to their homeland.

They need to consider this because we have no intention of allowing anyone to divide our country, neither by communist assaults nor by any other insidious plans. We will eliminate the filthy plot devised by the PKK by exploiting Kurdishness and demolish the plots of breaking Turkey up together with our Kurdish brothers who have been treated unfairly for many years, both by the deep state and the PKK. Kurds are our beloved and precious brothers. They are our friends and elder brothers; with their decency and integrity they are very dear to us and they are a part of us. The insidious powers who want to separate them from us and make them bait for those perfidious circles who are inimical to the Turkish state and the Turkish flag will in no way accomplish this.

What is important is to recognize the plots that have been established and to take measures in this respect. The plot that has been hatched against our country is quite evident and as a nation, we have responsibilities. The dark plots of the deep states of the world must be stopped by the Turkish nation and the ideological existence of the PKK must be eliminated by love, unity, education and dissuasive methods. The foundations of unity of the spirit that will bring peace to the entire world and embrace the entire world must be laid. Islamic Unity must be founded with those decent and true people, no matter what their religions, homelands or ethnic identities may be.

The justice of God must be kept in mind at every moment: In God's law, each plot hatched against faithful nations are created as disrupted in destiny. Consequently, no matter how big and efficient they may seem, dark and insidious plans are ineffective upon the Turkish nation. If we remain resolute, protect our unity and solidarity and essentially trust in God, in no way will a door be opened to those who have ambitions of taking some portion of our lands. We need to

keep in mind that neither deep powers nor superpowers, nor pro-violence circles govern the world; it is Almighty God Who is the sole Ruler of the world.

Rather We hurl the truth against falsehood and it cuts right through it and it vanishes clean away! Woe without end for your for what you portray! (Qur'an, 21:18)

Appendix:

The Deception of Evolution

Darwinism, in other words the theory of evolution, was put forward with the aim of denying the fact of Creation, but is in truth nothing but failed, unscientific nonsense. This theory, which claims that life emerged by chance from inanimate matter, was invalidated by the scientific evidence of miraculous order in the universe and in living things, as well as by the discovery of more than 300 million fossils revealing that evolution never happened. In this way, science confirmed the fact that God created the universe and the living things in it. The propaganda carried out today in order to keep the theory of evolution alive is based solely on the distortion of the scientific facts, biased interpretation, and lies and falsehoods disguised as science.

Yet this propaganda cannot conceal the truth. The fact that the theory of evolution is the greatest deception in the history of science has been expressed more and more in the scientific world over the last 20-30 years. Research carried out after the 1980s in particular has revealed that the claims of Darwinism are totally unfounded, something that has been stated by a large number of scientists. In the United States in particular, many scientists from such different fields as biology, biochemistry and paleontology recognize the invalidity of Darwinism and employ the fact of Creation to account for the origin of life.

We have examined the collapse of the theory of evolution and the proofs of Creation in great scientific detail in many of our works, and are still continuing to do so. Given the enormous importance of this subject, it will be of great benefit to summarize it here.

The Scientific Collapse of Darwinism

As a pagan doctrine going back as far as ancient Greece, the theory of evolution was advanced most extensively in the nineteenth century. The most important development that made it the top topic of the world of science was Charles Darwin's *The Origin of Species*, published in 1859. In this book, he opposed, in his own eyes, the fact that God created different living species on Earth separately, for he erroneously claimed that all living beings had a common ancestor and had diversified over time through small changes. Darwin's theory was not based on any concrete scientific finding; as he also accepted, it was just an "assumption." Moreover, as Darwin confessed in the long chapter of his book titled "Difficulties on Theory," the theory failed in the face of many critical questions.

Darwin invested all of his hopes in new scientific discoveries, which he expected to solve these difficulties. However, contrary to his expectations, scientific findings expanded the dimensions of these difficulties. The defeat of Darwinism in the face of science can be reviewed under three basic topics:

- 1) The theory cannot explain how life originated on Earth.
- 2) No scientific finding shows that the "evolutionary mechanisms" proposed by the theory have any evolutionary power at all.
- 3) The fossil record proves the exact opposite of what the theory suggests.

In this section, we will examine these three basic points in general outlines:

The First Insurmountable Step: The Origin of Life

The theory of evolution posits that all living species evolved from a single living cell that emerged on Earth 3.8 billion years ago, supposed to have happened as a result of coincidences. How a single cell could generate millions of complex living species and, if such an evolution really occurred, why traces of it cannot be observed in the fossil record are some of the questions that the theory cannot answer. However, first and foremost, we need to ask: **How did this "first cell" originate?**

Since the theory of evolution ignorantly denies Creation, it maintains that the "first cell" originated as a product of blind coincidences within the laws of nature, without any plan or arrangement. According to the theory, inanimate matter must have produced a living cell as a result of coincidences. Such a claim, however, is inconsistent with the most unassailable rules of biology.

"Life Comes From Life"

In his book, Darwin never referred to the origin of life. The primitive understanding of science in his time rested on the assumption that living beings had a very simple structure. Since medieval times, spontaneous generation, which asserts that non-living materials came together to form living organisms, had been widely accepted. It was commonly believed that insects came into being from food leftovers, and mice from wheat. Interesting experiments were conducted to prove this theory. Some wheat was placed on a dirty piece of cloth, and it was believed that mice would originate from it after a while.

Similarly, maggots developing in rotting meat was assumed to be evidence of spontaneous generation. However, **it was later understood that worms did not appear on meat spontaneously, but were carried there by flies in the form of larvae, invisible to the naked eye.**

Even when Darwin wrote *The Origin of Species*, the belief that bacteria could come into existence from non-living matter was widely accepted in the world of science.

However, **five years after the publication of Darwin's book, Louis Pasteur announced his results after long studies and experiments, that disproved spontaneous generation, a cornerstone of Darwin's theory.** In his triumphal lecture at the Sorbonne in

1864, **Pasteur said: "Never will the doctrine of spontaneous generation recover from the mortal blow struck by this simple experiment."** (Sidney Fox, Klaus Dose, *Molecular Evolution and The Origin of Life*, W. H. Freeman and Company, San Francisco, 1972, p. 4.)

For a long time, advocates of the theory of evolution resisted these findings. However, as the development of science unraveled the complex structure of the cell of a living being, the idea that life could come into being coincidentally faced an even greater impasse.

Inconclusive Efforts of the Twentieth Century

The first evolutionist who took up the subject of the origin of life in the twentieth century was the renowned Russian biologist Alexander Oparin. With various theses he advanced in the 1930s, he tried to prove that a living cell could originate by coincidence. These studies, however, were doomed to failure, and Oparin had to make the following confession:

Unfortunately, however, the problem of the origin of the cell is perhaps the most obscure point in the whole study of the evolution of organisms. (Alexander I. Oparin, Origin of Life, Dover Publications, New York, 1936, 1953 (reprint), p. 196.)

Evolutionist followers of Oparin tried to carry out experiments to solve this problem. The best known experiment was carried out by the American chemist Stanley Miller in 1953. Combining the gases he alleged to have existed in the primordial Earth's atmosphere in an experiment set-up, and adding energy to the mixture, Miller synthesized several organic molecules (amino acids) present in the structure of proteins.

Barely a few years had passed before it was revealed that **this experiment, which was then presented as an important step in the name of evolution, was invalid, for the atmosphere used in the experiment was very different from the real Earth conditions.** ("New Evidence on Evolution of Early Atmosphere and Life," *Bulletin of the American Meteorological Society*, vol 63, November 1982, 1328-1330)

After a long silence, **Miller confessed that the atmosphere medium he used was unrealistic.** (Stanley Miller, *Molecular Evolution of Life: Current Status of the Prebiotic Synthesis of Small Molecules*, 1986, p. 7)

All the evolutionists' efforts throughout the twentieth century to explain the origin of life ended in failure. The geochemist Jeffrey Bada, from the San Diego Scripps Institute accepts this fact in an article published in *Earth* magazine in 1998:

Today as we leave the twentieth century, we still face the biggest unsolved problem that we had when we entered the twentieth century: How did life originate on Earth? (Jeffrey Bada, Earth, February 1998, p. 40)

The Complex Structure of Life

The primary reason why evolutionists ended up in such a great impasse regarding the origin of life is that even those living organisms Darwinists deemed to be the simplest have outstandingly complex features. The cell of a living thing is more complex than all of our man-made technological products. **Today, even in the most developed laboratories of the world, no single protein of the cell, let alone a living cell itself, can be produced by bringing organic chemicals together.**

The conditions required for the formation of a cell are too great in quantity to be explained away by coincidences. However, there is no need to explain the situation with these details. Evolutionists are at a dead-end even before reaching the stage of the cell. That is because the probability of just a single protein, an essential building block of the cell, coming into being by chance is mathematically "0."

The main reason for this is the need for other proteins to be present if one protein is to form, and this completely eradicates the possibility of chance formation. This fact by itself is sufficient to eliminate the evolutionist claim of chance right from the outset. To summarize,

- 1. Protein cannot be synthesized without enzymes, and enzymes are all proteins.**
- 2. Around 100 proteins need to be present in order for a single protein to be synthesized. There therefore need to be proteins for proteins to exist.**
- 3. DNA manufactures the protein-synthesizing enzymes. Protein cannot be synthesized without DNA. DNA is therefore also needed in order for proteins to form.**
- 4. All the organelles in the cell have important tasks in protein synthesis. In other words, in order for proteins to form a perfect and fully functioning cell needs to exist together with all its organelles.**

The DNA molecule, which is located in the nucleus of a cell and which stores genetic information, is a magnificent databank. If the information coded in DNA were written down, it would make a giant library consisting of an estimated 900 volumes of encyclopedias consisting of 500 pages each.

A very interesting dilemma emerges at this point: DNA can replicate itself only with the help of some specialized proteins (enzymes). However, the synthesis of these enzymes can be realized only by the information coded in DNA. As they both depend on each other, they have to exist at the same time for replication. This brings the scenario that life originated by itself to a deadlock. Prof. Leslie Orgel, an evolutionist of repute from the University of San Diego, California, confesses this fact in the September 1994 issue of the *Scientific American* magazine:

It is extremely improbable that proteins and nucleic acids, both of which are structurally complex, arose spontaneously in the same place at the same time. Yet it also seems impossible to have one without the other. And so, at first glance, one might have to conclude that life could never, in fact, have originated by chemical means. (Leslie E. Orgel, "The Origin of Life on Earth," Scientific American, vol. 271, October 1994, p. 78.)

No doubt, if it is impossible for life to have originated spontaneously as a result of blind coincidences, then it has to be accepted that life was **created**. This fact explicitly invalidates the theory of evolution, whose main purpose is to deny Creation.

Imaginary Mechanism of Evolution

The second important point that negates Darwin's theory is that both concepts put forward by the theory as "evolutionary mechanisms" were understood to have, in reality, no evolutionary power.

Darwin based his evolution allegation entirely on the mechanism of "natural selection." The importance he placed on this mechanism was evident in the name of his book: *The Origin of Species, By Means of Natural Selection...*

Natural selection holds that those living things that are stronger and more suited to the natural conditions of their habitats will survive in the struggle for life. For example, in a deer herd under the threat of attack by wild animals, those that can run faster will survive. Therefore, the deer herd will be comprised of faster and stronger individuals. However, unquestionably, this mechanism will not cause deer to evolve and transform themselves into another living species, for instance, horses.

Therefore, the mechanism of natural selection has no evolutionary power. Darwin was also aware of this fact and had to state this in his book *The Origin of Species*:

Natural selection can do nothing until favourable individual differences or variations occur.
(Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection*, The Modern Library, New York, p. 127)

Lamarck's Impact

So, how could these "favourable variations" occur? Darwin tried to answer this question from the standpoint of the primitive understanding of science at that time. According to the French biologist Chevalier de Lamarck (1744-1829), who lived before Darwin, living creatures passed on the traits they acquired during their lifetime to the next generation. He asserted that these traits, which accumulated from one generation to another, caused new species to be formed. For instance, he claimed that giraffes evolved from antelopes; as they struggled to eat the leaves of high trees, their necks were extended from generation to generation.

Darwin also gave similar examples. In his book *The Origin of Species*, for instance, he said that some bears going into water to find food transformed themselves into whales over time. (Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species: A Facsimile of the First Edition*, Harvard University Press, 1964, p. 184.)

However, the laws of inheritance discovered by Gregor Mendel (1822-84) and verified by the science of genetics, which flourished in the twentieth century, utterly demolished the legend that acquired traits were passed on to subsequent generations. Thus, natural selection fell out of favor as an evolutionary mechanism.

Neo-Darwinism and Mutations

In order to find a solution, Darwinists advanced the "Modern Synthetic Theory," or as it is more commonly known, Neo-Darwinism, at the end of the 1930s. Neo-Darwinism added mutations, which are distortions formed in the genes of living beings due to such external factors as radiation or replication errors, as the "cause of favourable variations" in addition to natural mutation.

Today, the model that Darwinists espouse, despite their own awareness of its scientific invalidity, is neo-Darwinism. The theory maintains that millions of living beings formed as a result of a process whereby numerous complex organs of these organisms (e.g., ears, eyes, lungs, and wings) underwent "mutations," that is, genetic disorders. Yet, there is an outright scientific fact that totally undermines this theory: **Mutations do not cause living beings to develop; on the contrary, they are always harmful.**

The reason for this is very simple: **DNA has a very complex structure, and random effects can only harm it.** The American geneticist B. G. Ranganathan explains this as follows:

*First, genuine mutations are very rare in nature. Secondly, most mutations are harmful since they are random, rather than orderly changes in the structure of genes; any random change in a highly ordered system will be for the worse, not for the better. For example, **if an earthquake were to shake a highly ordered structure such as a building, there would be a random change in the framework of the building which, in all probability, would not be an improvement.** (B. G. Ranganathan, *Origins?*, Pennsylvania: The Banner of Truth Trust, 1988, p. 7.)*

Not surprisingly, no mutation example, which is useful, that is, which is observed to develop the genetic code, has been observed so far. All mutations have proved to be harmful. It was understood that mutation, which is presented as an "evolutionary mechanism," is actually a genetic occurrence that harms living things, and leaves them disabled. (The most common effect of mutation on human beings is cancer.) Of course, a destructive mechanism cannot be an "evolutionary mechanism." Natural selection, on the other hand, "can do nothing by itself," as Darwin also accepted. This fact shows us that **there is no "evolutionary mechanism" in nature.** Since no evolutionary mechanism exists, no such imaginary process called "evolution" could have taken place.

The Fossil Record: No Sign of Intermediate Forms

The clearest evidence that the scenario suggested by the theory of evolution did not take place is the fossil record.

According to the unscientific supposition of this theory, every living species has sprung from a predecessor. A previously existing species turned into something else over time and all species

have come into being in this way. In other words, this transformation proceeds gradually over millions of years.

Had this been the case, numerous intermediary species should have existed and lived within this long transformation period.

For instance, some half-fish/half-reptiles should have lived in the past which had acquired some reptilian traits in addition to the fish traits they already had. Or there should have existed some reptile-birds, which acquired some bird traits in addition to the reptilian traits they already had. Since these would be in a transitional phase, they should be disabled, defective, crippled living beings. Evolutionists refer to these imaginary creatures, which they believe to have lived in the past, as "transitional forms."

If such animals ever really existed, there should be millions and even billions of them in number and variety. More importantly, the remains of these strange creatures should be present in the fossil record. In *The Origin of Species*, Darwin explained:

If my theory be true, numberless intermediate varieties, linking most closely all of the species of the same group together must assuredly have existed... Consequently, evidence of their former existence could be found only amongst fossil remains. (Charles Darwin, The Origin of Species: A Facsimile of the First Edition, p. 179)

However, **Darwin was well aware that no fossils of these intermediate forms had yet been found.** He regarded this as a major difficulty for his theory. In one chapter of his book titled "Difficulties on Theory," he wrote:

*Why, if species have descended from other species by insensibly fine gradations, **do we not everywhere see innumerable transitional forms? Why is not all nature in confusion instead of the species being, as we see them, well defined?... But, as by this theory innumerable transitional forms must have existed, why do we not find them embedded in countless numbers in the crust of the earth?... Why then is not every geological formation and every stratum full of such intermediate links?** (Charles Darwin, The Origin of Species, p. 172)*

Darwin's Hopes Shattered

However, although evolutionists have been making strenuous efforts to find fossils since the middle of the nineteenth century all over the world, **no transitional forms have yet been uncovered.** All of the fossils, contrary to the evolutionists' expectations, show that **life appeared on Earth all of a sudden and fully-formed.**

One famous British paleontologist, Derek V. Ager, admits this fact, even though he is an evolutionist:

*The point emerges that if we examine the fossil record in detail, whether at the level of orders or of species, **we find - over and over again - not gradual evolution, but the sudden explosion of one group at the expense of another.** (Derek A. Ager, "The*

Nature of the Fossil Record," Proceedings of the British Geological Association, vol 87, 1976, p. 133.)

This means that in **the fossil record, all living species suddenly emerge as fully formed, without any intermediate forms in between.** This is just the opposite of Darwin's assumptions. Also, this is very strong evidence that **all living things are created.** The only explanation of a living species emerging suddenly and complete in every detail without any evolutionary ancestor is that it was created. This fact is admitted also by the widely known evolutionist biologist Douglas Futuyma:

Creation and evolution, between them, exhaust the possible explanations for the origin of living things. Organisms either appeared on the earth fully developed or they did not. If they did not, they must have developed from pre-existing species by some process of modification. If they did appear in a fully developed state, they must indeed have been created by some omnipotent intelligence. (Douglas J. Futuyma, Science on Trial, Pantheon Books, New York, 1983, p. 197)

Fossils show that living beings emerged fully developed and in a perfect state on the Earth. That means that "the origin of species," contrary to Darwin's supposition, is not evolution, but Creation.

The Tale of Human Evolution

The subject most often brought up by advocates of the theory of evolution is the subject of the origin of man. The Darwinist claim holds that man evolved from so-called ape-like creatures. During this alleged evolutionary process, which is supposed to have started four to five million years ago, some "transitional forms" between man and his imaginary ancestors are supposed to have existed. According to this completely imaginary scenario, four basic "categories" are listed:

1. *Australopithecus*
2. *Homo habilis*
3. *Homo erectus*
4. *Homo sapiens*

Evolutionists call man's so-called first ape-like ancestors *Australopithecus*, which means "South African ape." These living beings are actually nothing but an old ape species that has become extinct. Extensive research done on various *Australopithecus* specimens by two world famous anatomists from England and the USA, namely, Lord Solly Zuckerman and Prof. Charles Oxnard, shows that these apes belonged to an ordinary ape species that became extinct and bore no resemblance to humans. (Solly Zuckerman, *Beyond The Ivory Tower*, Toplinger Publications, New York, 1970, 75-14; Charles E. Oxnard, "The Place of Australopithecines in Human Evolution: Grounds for Doubt", *Nature*, vol 258, 389)

Evolutionists classify the next stage of human evolution as "homo," that is "man." According to their claim, the living beings in the Homo series are more developed than *Australopithecus*. Evolutionists devise a fanciful evolution scheme by arranging different fossils of these creatures in a particular order. This scheme is imaginary because it has never been proved that there is an

evolutionary relation between these different classes. Ernst Mayr, one of the twentieth century's most important evolutionists, contends in his book *One Long Argument* that "particularly historical [puzzles] such as the origin of life or of Homo sapiens, are extremely difficult and may even resist a final, satisfying explanation." ("Could science be brought to an end by scientists' belief that they have final answers or by society's reluctance to pay the bills?" *Scientific American*, December 1992, p. 20)

By outlining the link chain as *Australopithecus* > *Homo habilis* > *Homo erectus* > *Homo sapiens*, evolutionists imply that each of these species is one another's ancestor. However, recent findings of paleoanthropologists have revealed that *Australopithecus*, *Homo habilis*, and *Homo erectus* lived at different parts of the world at the same time. (Alan Walker, *Science*, vol. 207, 7 March 1980, p. 1103; A. J. Kelso, *Physical Anthropology*, 1st ed., J. B. Lipincott Co., New York, 1970, p. 221; M. D. Leakey, *Olduvai Gorge*, vol. 3, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1971, p. 272.)

Moreover, a certain segment of humans classified as *Homo erectus* have lived up until very modern times. ***Homo sapiens neandarthalensis* and *Homo sapiens sapiens* (man) co-existed in the same region.** (Jeffrey Kluger, "Not So Extinct After All: The Primitive Homo Erectus May Have Survived Long Enough To Coexist With Modern Humans," *Time*, 23 December 1996)

This situation apparently indicates the invalidity of the claim that they are ancestors of one another. The late Stephen Jay Gould explained this deadlock of the theory of evolution although he was himself one of the leading advocates of evolution in the twentieth century:

What has become of our ladder if there are three coexisting lineages of hominids (A. africanus, the robust australopithecines, and H. habilis), none clearly derived from another? Moreover, none of the three display any evolutionary trends during their tenure on earth. (S. J. Gould, Natural History, vol. 85, 1976, p. 30)

Put briefly, the scenario of human evolution, which is "upheld" with the help of various drawings of some "half ape, half human" creatures appearing in the media and course books, that is, frankly, by means of propaganda, is nothing but **a tale with no scientific foundation.**

Lord Solly Zuckerman, one of the most famous and respected scientists in the U.K., who carried out research on this subject for years and studied *Australopithecus* fossils for 15 years, finally concluded, despite being an evolutionist himself, **that there is, in fact, no such family tree branching out from ape-like creatures to man.**

Zuckerman also made an interesting "spectrum of science" ranging from those he considered scientific to those he considered unscientific. According to Zuckerman's spectrum, the most "scientific"—that is, depending on concrete data—fields of science are chemistry and physics. After them come the biological sciences and then the social sciences. At the far end of the spectrum, which is the part considered to be most "unscientific," are "extra-sensory perception"—concepts such as telepathy and sixth sense—and finally "human evolution." Zuckerman explains his reasoning:

We then move right off the register of objective truth into those fields of presumed biological science, like extrasensory perception or the interpretation of man's fossil history, where to the faithful [evolutionist] anything is possible - and where the ardent

believer [in evolution] is sometimes able to believe several contradictory things at the same time. (Solly Zuckerman, Beyond the Ivory Tower, p. 19)

The tale of human evolution boils down to nothing but the prejudiced interpretations of some fossils unearthed by certain people, who blindly adhere to their theory.

Darwinian Formula!

Besides all the technical evidence we have dealt with so far, let us now for once, examine what kind of a superstition the evolutionists have with an example so simple as to be understood even by children:

The theory of evolution asserts that life is formed by chance. According to this irrational claim, lifeless and unconscious atoms came together to form the cell and then they somehow formed other living things, including man. Let us think about that. When we bring together the elements that are the building-blocks of life such as carbon, phosphorus, nitrogen and potassium, only a heap is formed. No matter what treatments it undergoes, this atomic heap cannot form even a single living being. If you like, let us formulate an "experiment" on this subject and let us examine on the behalf of evolutionists what they really claim without pronouncing loudly under the name "Darwinian formula":

Let evolutionists put plenty of materials present in the composition of living things such as phosphorus, nitrogen, carbon, oxygen, iron, and magnesium into big barrels. Moreover, let them add in these barrels any material that does not exist under normal conditions, but they think as necessary. Let them add in this mixture as many amino acids and as many proteins - a single one of which can by no means form by chance - as they like. Let them expose these mixtures to as much heat and moisture as they like. Let them stir these with whatever technologically developed device they like. Let them put the foremost scientists beside these barrels. Let these experts wait in turn beside these barrels for billions, and even trillions of years. Let them be free to use all kinds of conditions they believe to be necessary for a human's formation. **No matter what they do, they cannot produce from these barrels a human, say a professor that examines his cell structure under the electron microscope.** They cannot produce giraffes, lions, bees, canaries, horses, dolphins, roses, orchids, lilies, carnations, bananas, oranges, apples, dates, tomatoes, melons, watermelons, figs, olives, grapes, peaches, peafowls, pheasants, multicoloured butterflies, or millions of other living beings such as these. Indeed, they could not obtain even a single cell of any one of them.

Briefly, **unconscious atoms cannot form the cell** by coming together. They cannot take a new decision and divide this cell into two, then take other decisions and create the professors who first invent the electron microscope and then examine their own cell structure under that microscope. **Matter is an unconscious, lifeless heap, and it comes to life with God's superior creation.**

The theory of evolution, which claims the opposite, is a total fallacy completely contrary to reason. Thinking even a little bit on the claims of evolutionists discloses this reality, just as in the above example.

Technology in the Eye and the Ear

Another subject that remains unanswered by evolutionary theory is the excellent quality of perception in the eye and the ear.

Before passing on to the subject of the eye, let us briefly answer the question of how we see. Light rays coming from an object fall oppositely on the eye's retina. Here, these light rays are transmitted into electric signals by cells and reach a tiny spot at the back of the brain, the "center of vision." These electric signals are perceived in this center as an image after a series of processes. With this technical background, let us do some thinking.

The brain is insulated from light. That means that its inside is completely dark, and that no light reaches the place where it is located. Thus, the "center of vision" is never touched by light and may even be the darkest place you have ever known. However, you observe a luminous, bright world in this pitch darkness.

The image formed in the eye is so sharp and distinct that even the technology of the twentieth century has not been able to attain it. For instance, look at the book you are reading, your hands with which you are holding it, and then lift your head and look around you. Have you ever seen such a sharp and distinct image as this one at any other place? Even the most developed television screen produced by the greatest television producer in the world cannot provide such a sharp image for you. This is a three-dimensional, colored, and extremely sharp image. For more than 100 years, thousands of engineers have been trying to achieve this sharpness. Factories, huge premises were established, much research has been done, plans and designs have been made for this purpose. Again, look at a TV screen and the book you hold in your hands. You will see that there is a big difference in sharpness and distinction. Moreover, the TV screen shows you a two-dimensional image, whereas with your eyes, you watch a three-dimensional perspective with depth.

For many years, tens of thousands of engineers have tried to make a three-dimensional TV and achieve the vision quality of the eye. Yes, they have made a three-dimensional television system, but it is not possible to watch it without putting on special 3-D glasses; moreover, it is only an artificial three-dimension. The background is more blurred, the foreground appears like a paper setting. Never has it been possible to produce a sharp and distinct vision like that of the eye. In both the camera and the television, there is a loss of image quality.

Evolutionists claim that the mechanism producing this sharp and distinct image has been formed by chance. Now, if somebody told you that the television in your room was formed as a result of chance, that all of its atoms just happened to come together and make up this device that produces an image, what would you think? How can atoms do what thousands of people cannot?

If a device producing a more primitive image than **the eye could not have been formed by chance**, then it is very evident that the eye and the image seen by the eye could not have been formed by chance. The same situation applies to the ear. The outer ear picks up the available sounds by the auricle and directs them to the middle ear, the middle ear transmits the sound vibrations by intensifying them, and the inner ear sends these vibrations to the brain by translating them into electric signals. Just as with the eye, the act of hearing finalizes in the center of hearing in the brain.

The situation in the eye is also true for the ear. That is, **the brain is insulated from sound** just as it is from light. It does not let any sound in. Therefore, no matter how noisy is the outside, the inside of the brain is completely silent. Nevertheless, the sharpest sounds are perceived in the brain. In **your completely silent brain, you listen to symphonies, and hear all of the noises in a crowded place.** However, were the sound level in your brain measured by a precise device at that moment, complete silence would be found to be prevailing there.

As is the case with imagery, decades of effort have been spent in trying to generate and reproduce sound that is faithful to the original. The results of these efforts are sound recorders, high-fidelity systems, and systems for sensing sound. Despite all of this technology and the thousands of engineers and experts who have been working on this endeavor, no sound has yet been obtained that has the same sharpness and clarity as the sound perceived by the ear. Think of the highest-quality hi-fi systems produced by the largest company in the music industry. Even in these devices, when sound is recorded some of it is lost; or when you turn on a hi-fi you always hear a hissing sound before the music starts. However, the sounds that are the products of the human body's technology are extremely sharp and clear. A human ear never perceives a sound accompanied by a hissing sound or with atmospherics as does a hi-fi; rather, it perceives sound exactly as it is, sharp and clear. This is the way it has been since **the creation of man.**

So far, no man-made visual or recording apparatus has been as sensitive and successful in perceiving sensory data as are the eye and the ear. However, as far as seeing and hearing are concerned, a far greater truth lies beyond all this.

To Whom Does the Consciousness that Sees and Hears within the Brain Belong?

Who watches an alluring world in the brain, listens to symphonies and the twittering of birds, and smells the rose?

The stimulations coming from a person's eyes, ears, and nose travel to the brain as electro-chemical nerve impulses. In biology, physiology, and biochemistry books, you can find many details about how this image forms in the brain. However, you will never come across the most important fact: Who perceives these electro-chemical nerve impulses as images, sounds, odors, and sensory events in the brain? **There is a consciousness in the brain that perceives all this without feeling any need for an eye, an ear, and a nose.** To whom does this consciousness belong? Of course it does not belong to the nerves, the fat layer, and neurons comprising the brain. This is why Darwinist-materialists, who believe that everything is comprised of matter, cannot answer these questions.

For **this consciousness is the spirit created by God**, which needs neither the eye to watch the images nor the ear to hear the sounds. Furthermore, it does not need the brain to think.

Everyone who reads this explicit and scientific fact should ponder on Almighty God, and fear and seek refuge in Him, for He squeezes the entire universe in a pitch-dark place of a few cubic centimeters in a three-dimensional, colored, shadowy, and luminous form.

A Materialist Faith

The information we have presented so far shows us that **the theory of evolution is incompatible with scientific findings**. The theory's claim regarding the origin of life is inconsistent with science, the evolutionary mechanisms it proposes have no evolutionary power, and fossils demonstrate that **the required intermediate forms have never existed**. So, it certainly follows that the theory of evolution should be pushed aside as an unscientific idea. This is how many ideas, such as the Earth-centered universe model, have been taken out of the agenda of science throughout history.

However, the theory of evolution is kept on the agenda of science. Some people even try to represent criticisms directed against it as an "attack on science." Why?

The reason is that this theory is an indispensable dogmatic belief for some circles. These circles are **blindly devoted** to materialist philosophy and adopt Darwinism because it is the only materialist explanation that can be put forward to explain the workings of nature.

Interestingly enough, they also confess this fact from time to time. A well-known geneticist and an outspoken evolutionist, Richard C. Lewontin from Harvard University, confesses that he is "first and foremost a materialist and then a scientist":

It is not that the methods and institutions of science somehow compel us accept a material explanation of the phenomenal world, but, on the contrary, that we are forced by our a priori adherence to material causes to create an apparatus of investigation and a set of concepts that produce material explanations, no matter how counter-intuitive, no matter how mystifying to the uninitiated. Moreover, that materialism is absolute, so we cannot allow a Divine [intervention]...(Richard Lewontin, "The Demon-Haunted World," The New York Review of Books, January 9, 1997, p. 28)

These are explicit statements that **Darwinism is a dogma** kept alive just for the sake of adherence to materialism. This dogma maintains that there is no being save matter. Therefore, it argues that inanimate, unconscious matter brought life into being. It insists that millions of different living species (e.g., birds, fish, giraffes, tigers, insects, trees, flowers, whales, and human beings) originated as a result of the interactions between matter such as pouring rain, lightning flashes, and so on, out of inanimate matter. This is a precept contrary both to reason and science. Yet Darwinists continue to ignorantly defend it just so as not to acknowledge, in their own eyes, the evident existence of God.

Anyone who does not look at the origin of living beings with a materialist prejudice sees this evident truth: **All living beings are works of a Creator**, Who is All-Powerful, All-Wise, and All-Knowing. **This Creator is God**, Who created the whole universe from non-existence, in the most perfect form, and fashioned all living beings.

The Theory of Evolution: The Most Potent Spell in the World

Anyone free of prejudice and the influence of any particular ideology, who uses only his or her reason and logic, will clearly understand that belief in the theory of evolution, which brings to mind the superstitions of societies with no knowledge of science or civilization, is quite impossible.

As explained above, those who believe in the theory of evolution think that a few atoms and molecules thrown into a huge vat could produce thinking, reasoning professors and university students; such scientists as Einstein and Galileo; such artists as Humphrey Bogart, Frank Sinatra and Luciano Pavarotti; as well as antelopes, lemon trees, and carnations. Moreover, as the scientists and professors who believe in this nonsense are educated people, it is quite justifiable to speak of this theory as "the most potent spell in history." Never before has any other belief or idea so taken away peoples' powers of reason, refused to allow them to think intelligently and logically, and hidden the truth from them as if they had been blindfolded. This is an even worse and unbelievable blindness than the totem worship in some parts of Africa, the people of Saba worshipping the Sun, the tribe of the Prophet Abraham (pbuh) worshipping idols they had made with their own hands, or some among the people of the Prophet Moses (pbuh) worshipping the Golden Calf.

In fact, God has pointed to this lack of reason in the Qur'an. In many verses, He reveals that some peoples' minds will be closed and that they will be powerless to see the truth. Some of these verses are as follows:

As for those who do not believe, it makes no difference to them whether you warn them or do not warn them, they will not believe. God has sealed up their hearts and hearing and over their eyes is a blindfold. They will have a terrible punishment. (Qur'an, 2:6-7)

... They have hearts with which they do not understand. They have eyes with which they do not see. They have ears with which they do not hear. Such people are like cattle. No, they are even further astray! They are the unaware. (Qur'an, 7:179)

Even if We opened up to them a door into heaven, and they spent the day ascending through it, they would only say: "Our eyesight is befuddled! Or rather we have been put under a spell!" (Qur'an, 15:14-15)

Words cannot express just how astonishing it is that this spell should hold such a wide community in thrall, keep people from the truth, and not be broken for 150 years. It is understandable that one or a few people might believe in impossible scenarios and claims full of stupidity and illogicality. However, "magic" is the only possible explanation for people from all over the world believing that unconscious and lifeless atoms suddenly decided to come together and form a universe that functions with a flawless system of organization, discipline, reason, and consciousness; a planet named Earth with all of its features so perfectly suited to life; and living things full of countless complex systems.

In fact, in the Qur'an God relates the incident of the Prophet Moses (pbuh) and Pharaoh to show that some people who support atheistic philosophies actually influence others by magic. When Pharaoh was told about the true religion, he told the Prophet Moses (pbuh) to meet with his own magicians. When the Prophet Moses (pbuh) did so, he told them to demonstrate their abilities first. The verses continue:

He said: "You throw." And when they threw, they cast a spell on the people's eyes and caused them to feel great fear of them. They produced an extremely powerful magic. (Qur'an, 7:116)

As we have seen, Pharaoh's magicians were able to deceive everyone, apart from the Prophet Moses (pbuh) and those who believed in him. However, his evidence broke the spell, or "swallowed up what they had forged," as revealed in the verse:

We revealed to Moses: "Throw down your staff." And it immediately swallowed up what they had forged. So the Truth took place and what they did was shown to be false. (Qur'an, 7:117-118)

As we can see, when people realized that a spell had been cast upon them and that what they saw was just an illusion, Pharaoh's magicians lost all credibility. In the present day too, unless those who, under the influence of a similar spell, believe in these ridiculous claims under their scientific disguise and spend their lives defending them, abandon their superstitious beliefs, they also will be humiliated when the full truth emerges and the spell is broken. In fact, world-renowned British writer and philosopher Malcolm Muggeridge, who was an atheist defending evolution for some sixty years, but who subsequently realized the truth, reveals the position in which the theory of evolution would find itself in the near future in these terms:

*I myself am convinced that **the theory of evolution**, especially the extent to which it's been applied, **will be one of the great jokes in the history books in the future.** Posterity will marvel that so very flimsy and dubious an hypothesis could be accepted with the incredible credulity that it has. (Malcolm Muggeridge, *The End of Christendom, Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1980, p. 43*)*

That future is not far off: On the contrary, people will soon see that "chance" is not a deity, and will look back on **the theory of evolution as the worst deceit and the most terrible spell in the world.** That spell is already rapidly beginning to be lifted from the shoulders of people all over the world. Many people who see its true face are wondering with amazement how they could ever have been taken in by it.

Notes

1. Yasin Yaylar, İsrail Amerika ve Evanjelizm (Israel, America and Evangelism), Altınpost Yayıncılık, 2012, p. 16
2. <http://iraqwar.org/fundamentalists.htm>
3. <http://www.pewforum.org/2015/05/12/americas-changing-religious-landscape/>
4. Yasin Yaylar, İsrail Amerika ve Evanjelizm (Israel, America and Evangelism), Altınpost Yayıncılık, 2012, p. 60
5. Ibid., p. 119
6. Ibid., p. 73 (http://www.jewishchronicle.org/article.php?article_id=8699)
7. Ibid., p. 74 (<http://www.nytimes.com/2002/03/03/us/billy-graham-apologizes-to-jews-for-his-remarks-on-nixon-tapes.html>)
8. Kürşad Berkkan – Cenk Eğilmezbilek, Başkan Öcalan "PKK ile mücadeleden müzakereye" (President Öcalan "From fighting the PKK to negotiation), İstanbul, 2013, p. 37
9. Altemur Kılıç, Büyük Kürdistan Büyük İsrail, (Great Kurdistan Great Israel), Buğra Yayıncılık, İstanbul, p. 181
10. Cemal Temizöz, Siyasallaşan PKK Terörü (The Politicization of PKK Terror), Togan Yayıncılık, Bakırköy, February 2012, p. 81
11. Ibid., p. 82
12. Viladimir I. Lenin, Collected Works, Vol. 9, June-November 1905
13. Burhan Semiz, PKK ve KCK'nın Din Stratejisi (The Religious Strategy of the PKK and KCK), p. 98
14. Özgür Yaşamla Diyaloglar (Dialogues with the Free Life), p. 201
15. Kürdistan'da Halk Kahramanlığı (Popular Heroism in Kurdistan), İstanbul, March 2004, p. 78
16. Elif Çalışkan Polat, PKK Terör Örgütüne Dış Destek (Foreign Support for the PKK Terror Organization), Çatı Kitapları, 2013, p. 34
17. Bartu Soral, Paralel Kürdistan Kumpası (The Parallel Kurdistan Stratagem), p. 65 (Rafet Ballı – The Kurd File)
18. Burhan Semiz, PKK ve KCK'nın Din Stratejisi (The Religious Strategy of the PKK and KCK), p. 210
19. Cevdet Saral, Terörün Gizli Efendileri (The Secret Lords of Terror), Kripto Yayınları, Ankara, 2012, p. 265
20. Ibid., p. 266
21. Questions & Answers to American Trade Unionists: Stalin's Interview With the First American Trade Union Delegation to Soviet Russia, Pravda, September 15, 1927; <http://www.marxists.org/reference/archive/stalin/works/1927/09/15.HTM>
22. Dr. Fred C. Schwarz, Komünistler Nasıl Yalan Söyler [You Can Trust the Communists (to be Communists)], pp. 215-216
23. Necati Alkan, PKK'da Semboller, Aktörler ve Kadınlar (Symbols, actors and women in the PKK), 2012, Karakutu Yayınları, pp. 21-22
24. Ibid., pp. 77-78
25. Abdullah Öcalan, Nasıl Yaşamalı (How to live), p. 91
26. Necati Alkan, PKK'da Semboller, Aktörler ve Kadınlar (Symbols, actors and women in the PKK), 2012, Karakutu Yayınları, pp. 71-72
27. Ibid., pp. 71-72
28. Global Masculinities and Manhood, What makes a man within his own culture, University of Illinois Press, 2013, p. 95
29. Necati Alkan, PKK'da Semboller, Aktörler ve Kadınlar (Symbols, actors and women in the PKK), 2012, Karakutu Yayınları, p. 104
30. Ibid., p. 256
31. Ibid., p. 256
32. Ibid., p. 258

33. Ibid., p. 91
34. Ibid., pp. 100-101
35. Ibid., p. 103
36. Özgür Yaşamla Diyaloglar (Dialogues with the Free Life), October 2002, p. 257
37. Sümer Rahip Devletinden Demokratik Uygarlığa (From the Priestly Sumerian State to Democratic Civilization), Vol. 1, December 2001, p. 204
38. Ibid., p. 313
39. Ibid., p. 354
40. Lenin, Collected Works, vol. 15, pp. 402-413, "The Attitude of the Workers' Party to Religion," May 13 (28), 1909.
41. http://www.haber365.com/Haber/Ocalan_Islam_Kurtler_Icin_Truva_Ati/
42. Burhan Semiz, PKK ve KCK'nın Din Stratejisi (The Religious Strategy of the PKK and KCK), p. 115
43. Ibid., p. 111
44. Ibid., pp. 125-126
45. <http://www.washingtonpost.com/blogs/worldviews/wp/2014/10/27/turkey-still-thinks-this-guy-holding-a-baby-bear-is-a-terrorist-is-he>
46. Burhan Semiz, PKK ve KCK'nın Din Stratejisi (The Religious Strategy of the PKK and KCK), p. 101
47. Ibid., pp. 95-96
48. Ibid., pp. 125-126
49. Ibid., p. 132
50. Ibid., pp. 188-189
51. Ibid., pp. 189-190
52. Ibid., p. 135
53. Ibid., p. 112
54. Ibid., p. 135
55. Ibid., p. 135
56. MEB, Sosyoloji ders kitabı (Ministry of Education, Sociology text book), p. 96
57. MEB, Felsefe ders kitabı (Ministry of Education, Philosophy text book), p. 171
58. Ümit Özdağ, PKK ile Pazarlık (Negotiating with the PKK), Kripto Yayıncılık, 2013, p. 15
59. Elif Çalışkan Polat, PKK Terör Örgütüne Dış Destek (Foreign Support for the PKK Terror Organization), Çatı Kitapları, 2013, p. 34
60. <http://www.milliyet.com.tr/onder-pkk-cok-demokratik-bir-yapi/siyaset/detay/2022602/default.htm>
61. Elif Çalışkan Polat, PKK Terör Örgütüne Dış Destek (Foreign Support for the PKK Terror Organization), Çatı Kitapları, 2013, p. 35
62. Ümit Özdağ, PKK ile Pazarlık (Negotiating with the PKK), Kripto Yayıncılık, 2013, p. 178
63. <http://ajanshaber.com/-ypg-pkk-tarafindan-kuruldu-haberi/132098>
64. <http://ajanshaber.com/-ypg-pkk-tarafindan-kuruldu-haberi/132098>
65. <http://haber.sol.org.tr/dunyadan/barzani-ile-gerilimin-ardindan-pyd-74-kdp-mensubunu-serbest-birakti-haberi-73385>
66. http://www.radikal.com.tr/dunya/barzaniden_tekci_ve_dayatmaci_pydye_kinama-1192855
67. <http://www.timeturk.com/tr/2013/08/01/esed-in-zindanlarindan-ciktik-pyd-zindanlarina-girmeyiz.html#.VJZcxsBGo>
68. <http://www.haber10.com/haber/540076/>
69. <http://www.hrw.org/news/2014/06/18/syria-abuses-kurdish-run-enclaves>
70. <http://www.thedailybeast.com/articles/2015/06/02/town-the-u-s-helped-save-now-run-by-terrorists.html>
71. Ibid.
72. Ibid.
73. Ibid.
74. <http://www.washingtonpost.com/blogs/worldviews/wp/2014/10/27/turkey-still-thinks-this-guy-holding-a-baby-bear-is-a-terrorist-is-he>
75. <http://www.aljazeera.com.tr/al-jazeera-ozel/ kisanak-petrolden-pay-istiyoruz>
76. Ümit Özdağ, PKK ile Pazarlık (Negotiating with the PKK), Kripto Yayıncılık, 2013, p. 252
77. http://www.zaman.com.tr/politika_pkk-ozerklik-ilan-ediyor_2200699.html

78. Cemal Temizöz, Siyasallaşan PKK Terörü (The Politicization of PKK Terror), Togan Yayınları, Bakırköy, February 2012, p. 531
79. 21. Yüzyıl Türkiye Enstitüsü (21st Century Turkey Institute), Special Report, PKK'nın kontrolündeki Diyarbakır (Diyarbakır under PKK control), September 2013, p. 4
80. Ibid., p. 4
81. Stratejik Düşünce Enstitüsü (Strategic Thought Institute - STI) Analysis, KCK Örgütlenme Modeli ve Amacı (The KCK Model and Aim), July 2011, p. 12
82. Carl J. Friedrich and Zbigniew K. Brzezinski's' Totalitarian Dictatorship and Autocracy - Stratejik Düşünce Enstitüsü (Strategic Thought Institute - STI) Analysis, KCK Örgütlenme Modeli ve Amacı (The KCK Model and Aim), July 2011, p. 12
83. Stratejik Düşünce Enstitüsü (Strategic Thought Institute - STI) Analysis, KCK Örgütlenme Modeli ve Amacı (The KCK Model and Aim), July 2011, p. 15
84. <http://gundem.bugun.com.tr/m/NewsDetail.aspx?id=125783>
85. Stratejik Düşünce Enstitüsü (Strategic Thought Institute - STI) Analysis, KCK Örgütlenme Modeli ve Amacı (The KCK Model and Aim), July 2011, p. 29
86. Tuğçe Tatari, Anneanne Ben Aslında Diyarbakır'da değildim (Grandmother, I was Not in Diyarbakır), Doğan Kitap, 2015, p. 179
87. Stratejik Düşünce Enstitüsü (Strategic Thought Institute - STI) Analysis, KCK Örgütlenme Modeli ve Amacı (The KCK Model and Aim), July 2011, p. 29
88. Gerek yok ki... (There is no need...), Ahmet Altan, Daily Taraf, 22nd October 2011, <http://www.taraf.com.tr/yazilar/ahmet-altan/gerek-yok-ki/18259/>
89. Burhan Semiz, KCK'nın Din Stratejisi (The Religious Strategy of the PKK and KCK), pp. 201-204
90. <http://www.sabah.com.tr/Gundem/2011/12/25/ocalan-peygamber-evi-kabe#>
91. <http://www.dogruhaber.com.tr/Haber/Ocalani-Peygamber-ilan-ettiler-122778.html>
92. <http://www.serxwebun.org/index.php?sys=nave Rok&id=63>
93. <http://haber.sol.org.tr/yazarlar/ilker-belek/karma-egitim-cinsel-gelisim-82967>
94. <http://www.ensonhaber.com/kck-osman-baydemiri-aglatti-2012-04-20.html>
95. http://www.radikal.com.tr/yazarlar/murat_yetkin/kurt_sureci_secim_ikileminde-1221690
96. Abdullah Öcalan, Demokratik Uygurlik Manifestosu, (Manifesto for a Democratic Civilization, Book 5), V. book, 2013, p. 16
97. http://tr.wikisource.org/wiki/KCK_S%C3%B6zle%C5%9Fmesi
98. <http://haber.star.com.tr/yazar/mardin-kantonundan-yaziyorum/yazi-1029450>
99. <http://www.dirilispostasi.com/orgut-uc-bin-cocugu-kacirdi/>
100. <http://haber.star.com.tr/yazar/secim-sahasindan-bildiriyorum/yazi-1025861>
101. 21. Yüzyıl Türkiye Enstitüsü (The 21st Century Turkey Institute), Special report, PKK'nın kontrolündeki Diyarbakır (Diyarbakır under the control of the PKK), September 2013, p. 5
102. "Urban Warfare Escalates in Turkey's Kurdish-Majority Southeast," The Wall Street Journal, Ayla Albayrak, <http://www.wsj.com/articles/urban-warfare-escalates-in-turkeys-kurdish-majority-southeast-1440024103>
103. <http://www.haberturk.com/yazarlar/fatih-altayli/902652-eski-turkiyeye-donus>
104. <http://www.milliyet.com.tr/sabri-ok-silahsizlanma-gundem-1973869/>
105. Şemdin Sakık, Çözüm Süreci (The Solution Process), Alter Yayınları, 2014, pp. 100-103
106. Ibid., pp. 116-117
107. Ibid., p. 117
108. <http://www.milliyet.com.tr/kemal-burkay-in-bu-aciklmalari-pkk-yi-cileden-cikaracak-siyaset-siyasetdetay/27.02.2012/1508468/default.htm>
109. Şemdin Sakık, Çözüm Süreci (The Solution Process), Alter Yayınları, 2014, pp. 73-74
110. Ibid., p. 172
111. <http://t24.com.tr/haber/pkk-dhkp-c-tikko-yoldaslarini-nasil-oldurduler,267458>
112. <http://t24.com.tr/haber/pkk-dhkp-c-tikko-yoldaslarini-nasil-oldurduler,267458>
113. <http://www.ensonhaber.com/pkkli-cemil-bayiktan-isid-itirafi-2014-09-26.html>
114. <http://www.zeit.de/politik/ausland/2014-12/pkk-erdogan-is>
115. <http://metinozkanvadiasi.com/haber/pjakhberi.html>
116. Ümit Özdağ, PKK ile Pazarlık, (Negotiating with the PKK), Kripto Yayıncılık, 2013, p. 126
117. Ibid., p. 127

118. Ibid., p.. 137
119. Ibid., p. 138
120. <http://a9.com.tr/izle/196084/>
121. Şemdin Sakık, Çözüm Süreci (The Solution Process), Andaç Yayınları, 2014, p. 52
122. Cemal Temizöz, Siyasallaşan PKK Terörü (The Politicization of PKK Terror), Togan Yayınları, Bakırköy, February 2012, p. 184
123. 21. Yüzyıl Türkiye Enstitüsü, Special Report, PKK'nın kontrolündeki Diyarbakır (Diyarbakır under PKK control), September 2013, p. 5
124. Ümit Özdağ, PKK ile Pazarlık (Negotiating with the PKK), Kripto Yayıncılık, 2013, p. 232
125. Ibid., p. 248
126. <http://www.hurriyet.com.tr/dunya/28757933.asp>
127. Ümit Özdağ, PKK ile Pazarlık (Negotiating with the PKK), Kripto Yayıncılık, 2013, p. 188
128. Marx and Engels, Letters, p. 42
129. Leon Trotsky, Marxism in Our Time, Coyoacan, D.F., Mexico., April 18, 1939., <http://www.marxist.com/science/marxismanddarwinism.html>
130. Kent Hovind, The False Religion of Evolution, [http:// www.hsv.tis.net/....ke4vol/evolve/ndxng.html](http://www.hsv.tis.net/....ke4vol/evolve/ndxng.html)
131. Bedran Akdağ, Dağın Ardındaki Gerçekler (The Facts behind the Mountains), Ozan Yayıncılık, 2012, p. 35
132. Ibid., p. 36
133. Ibid., p. 37
134. Dr. Salih Akyürek, Kürtler ve Zazalar Ne Düşünüyor? Ortak Değer ve Sembollere Bakış (What Do the Kurds and Zazas Think? A Look at Common Values and Symbols), BİLGESAM, report no. 26, Istanbul 2011, <http://www.bilgesam.org/Images/Dokumanlar/0-91-2014040810rapor26.pdf>
135. <http://www.harunyahya.com/en/Books/27681/the-prophet-jesus-%28as%29-and>
136. Al-Qawl al-Mukhtasar fi 'Alamat al-Mahdi al-Muntadhar, p.29 and 48
137. Al-Haythami, Al-Qawl al-Mukhtasar, p. 24
138. Sunan Ibn Majah, 10/334
139. Sunan Ibn Majah, 10/334
140. Imam Sharani, Death-Doomsday-Hereafter and The Signs of the End Times, p. 496
141. Nuaim ibn Hammad's Kitab Al-Fitan, hadith No: 971

**They said, "Glory be to You! We have no knowledge except what
You have taught us. You are the All-Knowing, the All-Wise."
(Qur'an, 2:32)**

RESİM ALTI YAZILARI

s.14

Syrian streets devastated by the civil war.

BEFORE

AFTER

s.15

BEFORE

AFTER

s.19

An 18th century cathedral and people of the time.

s.20

Theodor Herzl speaking at the Second Zionist Congress in Basel in 1898.

s.22

The number of members of the Evangelical Church in America was 4 million at the time of the Civil War, but is now said to have reached some 70 million. The rise in spirituality in America and other countries where Christianity is widespread is grounds for rejoicing.

s.23

Muslims, Christians and Jews must all be more devout at this time when irreligion is on the rise.

s.33

The factor behind this state of affairs, not only in Iraq, but also in Syria, Lebanon, Yemen, Libya, and even Egypt is without doubt the illegitimate Iraq War. The Middle East has suddenly been transformed into a sea of blood, and violence has been constantly incited.

EGYPT

YEMEN

LEBANON

LIBYA

SYRIA

s.35

The drama of the people of the Middle East was not random. The map and the climate designed by secret forces a hundred years ago are being actively applied today.

s.37

Some Evangelicals attach importance to the backing they receive from the Jewish lobby. In fact, however, they believe that a great many Jews will be slaughtered in the bloody war they expect to see in the future.

s.38

Of course, not all Evangelicals long to see a war that will devastate the Middle East. Those who do desire it have clearly misinterpreted Evangelical belief. That error may result in terrible outcomes in the Middle East. Our purpose here is to draw attention to it and indicate the true path.

s.41

The expectation of war that makes unity among the different faiths, peace and brotherhood impossible is a direct violation of the law of God and the reason behind the sending of the prophets. There is therefore a problem of perception behind some Evangelicals' expectation of a terrible war.

s.42

Some Evangelicals' idea of the Holy Land differs from that of the Jews. The Jews regard the current land of Israel as compatible with the Torah, while some Evangelicals refer to a much broader territory, even including part of Turkey.

s.44

The word that was most commonly related in the Middle East in the wake of the Arab Spring was "fragmentation." Iraq and Syria were divided into parts in a planned manner, and their peoples are still living in misery. The plans for the break-up of the rest of the Middle East are still continuing.

s.47

It is of course Muslims who fail to be united among themselves who are primarily responsible for the fragmentation in the Middle East. These Muslims are divided along lines of sect, race or ethnicity, and are all in a state of disagreement. As a result, the blood of their brothers is constantly being spilled in the Middle East.

s.52

The PKK, a Stalinist, communist terror organization, is based in the Qandil Mountains on the Iraqi and Iranian border. It hides out and perpetrates cowardly attacks from behind.

s.55

On 20th August 1987, members of the PKK attacked the home of Şehmus Arık in the Bahçe arable field of Dargeçit district of Mardin with Kalashnikovs. They killed three children, two of them girls. The 4-month-old Hamza was asleep in his cradle when the bullets struck.

s.58

The treacherous nature of the PKK is based on cowardly attacks from behind and other guerrilla warfare tactics. Communist guerrilla tactics have represented its main method ever since the PKK's founding manifesto.

s.60

Öcalan himself states that the PKK is a Marxist-Leninist organization. That ideology remains unchanged today.

s.63

The first flag used by the PKK was a red communist one with the symbols of the hammer and sickle. Party congresses were held under posters of Marx, Lenin and Stalin. The flag and slogans have today been changed with the adoption of an imperialist mask. The mentality, however, is exactly the same.

s.64

In order to see how the terror organization is a communist one we also need to look at the Darwinist and communist expressions in the PKK manifesto on its official web site:

Communality is a form of being of the human species. The process of the human species evolving into a human beings after its breaking away from its animal-like ancestors and the level of its communality go hand in hand. There is no individual life other than communal life.

Dialectical dualities, the language of the universal system, flow by becoming richer or poorer in societal change and development.

Source: <http://www.pkkonline.com/tr/index.php?sys=article&artID=200>

s.65

Abdullah Öcalan, the leader of the PKK terror organization, openly espoused Leninist, communist views until the 1990s. Red communist flags and posters of Lenin, Marx and Engels were prominent at party congresses held before the '90s. The change of identity in the form of a transition to imperialism after the '90s is entirely deceptive. This change, carried out in order to curry favor with the U.S., is intended to attract U.S. support only until the establishment of an independent state. The state to be set up with U.S. backing will be a communist one aiming to rule the entire world. The U.S. is unaware that it is supporting the aim of a communist state.

s.67

The imperialist mask used by the PKK today has deceived many people both in the West and in Turkey. The fact is, however, that the PKK has renounced none of its ideology and objectives. It is still determined to seize land from Turkey, to entirely eliminate the Turkish state, which it regards as colonialist, and to establish a state in those lands instead. Indeed, the PKK returned to its cowardly attacks at the first available opportunity, initiated bloody terror attacks as required by its communist ideology, and shown its true face by immediately altering the impression it gave of being a "dove of peace". It is essential that the West immediately realize the scale of this deception and see the kind of nightmare that the PKK could inflict, not just on Turkey and the Middle East, but on the whole world.

s.68

Although the PKK has donned an imperialist mask, the initial training given to young people in the caves is still Darwinist and Marxist-Leninist education. The method employed is based on Marxist propaganda at every available opportunity. No activity is currently taking place against the ideology of the PKK in Turkey, and no young generation capable of responding scientifically to false Darwinist and Marxist ideology is being produced. Because as in the rest of the world, Darwinism is also taught in Turkish schools, and the basic ideology of the PKK appears on the curriculum just as if it were true fact. That being the case it is impossible for an educational mobilization, the most important factor in demolishing the foundations of the PKK, to take place. As the ideology of the PKK grows ever stronger, no activity that might stop it is taking place.

s.69

When PKK militants join the organization the first thing that happens is that they are given philosophical and ideological instruction. This ideological training is the foundation of the PKK. Once such instruction has been given, the result is generations of people who regard human beings as a kind of animal, who think that there is no point to existence, who believe killing as necessary for survival and who regard conflict as a necessity. PKK thus became capable of anything for the sake of the ideology that gives meaning to their existence. The only solution to terror lies in showing that Darwinism, the basis of Marxism, is a fraud. A terrorist who sees that he believes in a false religion will lose all his faith, fervor and false aims.

s.71

To the side can be seen an award given by the South African Communist Party to the leader of the separatist terror organization, Abdullah Öcalan. In giving him the award, the general-secretary of the South African Communist Party, Blade Nzimande, praised Öcalan for his terrorist campaign against imperialism and colonialism, and described him as a beacon of the communist and socialist movement.

As this shows, the communist movement draws support from communists all over the world. Since the movement in Southeast Turkey is a communist one, and since it perpetrates terror in its most ferocious form as a requirement of that communism, it enjoys constant support from communist countries and groupings until their dream of a communist world state is achieved.

s.73

Violence is the basic tactic of Marxism and Leninism. Communist states, communist practices and posters and manifestos prepared to that end all point to violence. The PKK also seeks to achieve all its aims in Turkey and the Southeast by means of violence.

s.74

Since the communist mindset wishes to oppose all imperialist forces, it opposes all the policies of the U.S. and the pro-US West, and even their very existence. The way the U.S. flag is targeted on communist posters is a manifestation of this ideal.

s.76

The basic aim of the PKK is to achieve political and military power by establishing a communist state on Turkish soil and to build a dictatorship of the proletariat through intense oppression of the Kurdish people. This is not our claim, but an ultimate objective in the founding manifesto of the PKK.

s.81

The Hammer Force based in Turkey's İncirlik Base in the immediate wake of the 1991 Iraq War. The picture shows foreign troops. Inset is an aerial view.

s.82

From being a supporter of Russia and China, the PKK suddenly became a supporter of the U.S. and falsely adopted an imperialist mask.

s.84

The PKK grew stronger in the wake of the Hammer Force and returned to its terrorist actions, having rearmed, on Turkish soil. Twenty PKK camps suddenly appeared to the north of the 36th parallel, and by means of a purely superficial change of tactics they received backing from the U.S. and the coalition.

s.86

The Kurds are a source of pride and honor for us. They are a symbol of well-manners, honesty, respect, and love. Communist traitors will never drive a wedge between the Kurds and us.

s.89

The sinister days in Turkey when people were oppressed because of their ethnicity, religion or beliefs have now come to an end. Of course, we are aware of the sufferings that occurred in the past, but the time has now come for all our people to live in freedom, democracy and happiness. No force that seeks to prevent this will ever succeed.

s.90

Lenin and Stalin were the bloodiest communist leaders ever. The small pictures show people slaughtered by these two dictators.

Öcalan declares he will follow the same path, by saying, "I am the Lenin of this century".

s.91

Stalin, who said, "We engage in anti-religious propaganda, and will continue to do so", once supported the Church for tactical reasons against the growth of fascism in the West. Yet in practice communism was entirely based on the destruction of places of worship.

Left: The Georgievsky Church in Gorky being demolished by Bolshevik militants.

s.92

The Georgievsky Church in Gorky following its demolition by the Bolsheviks.

Lower right; A church in Russia being used as a warehouse.

s.95

The most important communist tactic involves pro-family propaganda, to which communism is in fact absolutely opposed. This propaganda accompanied by smiling faces in communist posters is solely intended to strengthen the communist state, followed by the total eradication of the family.

s.99

Women, once described as "an element of corruption" by Öcalan, were employed as propaganda tools as required by the imperialist mask donned by him. Yet the organization is in fact a trap for women, who are constantly repressed.

s.100

The real aim behind the admission of women to the terror organization is for women to be used for the purpose of encouraging the male terrorists in the PKK, which was facing the threat of complete annihilation. Women were used in suicide attacks solely in order to encourage the men.

s.102

When the need arose in the organization, Öcalan attempted to win women over, having previously described them as 'an element that corrupts men', with slogans such as 'A free woman for a free Kurdistan'. In the light of such powerful propaganda, many women seeking to escape the feudal system believed it, but many of them subsequently regretted it when they saw the true face of the organization.

s.103

Women are bound to lose when left at the mercy of men.

s.105

The presence in the Southeast of Turkey in particular, of factors such as refusal to send girls to school, marrying children off at a young age and traditional killings has always been used as a card by the PKK, and there has been intense propaganda to the effect that women who head to the mountains will be "free". Many young women up in the mountains are either with the organization in order to free themselves from the feudal system or else having been kidnapped by it. The PKK is still kidnapping young people and children in the Southeast of Turkey.

s.107

Women must be completely free, and be well-groomed and at liberty to dress as they please. Anyone who advocates real Islam, meaning the moral values of the Qur'an unadulterated by any superstitions, will also advocate freedom for women. Turkey must be in the vanguard of this, and must not leave the initiative to a perfidious terror organization such as the PKK that seeks to make a good impression on the West.

s.110

A poster intended to serve communist propaganda about "freeing women from servitude".

s.111

The PKK makes propaganda about freeing women from servitude. Yet communism is a system of ideas that regards women as a worthless common chattel and that despises them as part of its ideology. It is therefore impossible for the communist system to elevate women.

s.117

Marx's idea of communism that was based on violence and disregarded religion and the family was put into practice in Lenin's savage policies.

s.118

The inhabitants of the Southeast of Turkey are the people of love with the loftiest moral values. It is impossible for them to adapt any other lifestyle than Islam and to live by the cold and loveless spirit of Marxism.

s.119

Eating any kind of fruit from this garden is halal [lawful]

s.120

The fact that the Kurds refused to renounce their religion and adopt a Leninist way of thinking forced the PKK to change its tactics. The PKK, which explicitly rejected all forms of religion, began softening its language toward it, as required by its new mask of imperialism. But in fact, the PKK still intends to eradicate all religions.

s.125

The religion, family values and spirituality that the communists seek to destroy are values that the people of the Southeast Turkey will never forego.

s.126

Evolution

s.127

Top right: A hornet preserved in a 50-million-year-old amber in the finest detail right down to the present day.

Top left: A present-day hornet identical to a 50-million-year-old fossil specimen.

s.128

Our young people study Darwinism as a compulsory subject in public schools, and under the influence of the false infrastructure they thus acquire, it is easy for them to fall under the spell of ideologies rooted in Darwinism, such as communism and fascism, later in their lives.

s.132

Violence and conflict have become images that we are familiar with almost everywhere in the world. The main reason for this is that the nonsensical infrastructure of the philosophy of conflict and violence, Darwinism in other words, is literally taught as if it were an established fact in schools.

s.139

God Exists

s.140

EXAMPLES FROM THE TEXTBOOKS CONSISTING OF EVOLUTION IN TURKISH SCHOOLS.

Evolution

s.141

A- Beginning of Life

B- Evolution

s.142

EXAMPLES FROM THE TEXTBOOKS CONSISTING OF EVOLUTION IN TURKISH SCHOOLS.

s.144

Öcalan's fundamental objective is to establish a 50,000-member army and seize the Southeast of Turkey through a Maoist guerrilla war. The imperialist mask is a deception. There is in fact no change in that objective.

s.149

This country belongs to us all, and we will never allow it to be broken up. The course that best becomes us is to live as brothers.

Left: A glorious view from Batman.

s.150

Those treacherous forces that would bring the Turkish flag down anywhere in the country will always encounter the resistance of the Turkish nation. This country is not destined to be broken up.

Right: A view from Diyarbakır

s.157

The West's sensitivity on Kobane was noteworthy. As the coalition concentrated on that area alone, powerful propaganda was also spread within Western countries. The sole reason for that is; the actual area of sensitivity for the West is the Kurdish region rather than the Middle East.

s.159

The West that failed to react when large cities in Syria and Iraq were captured immediately went into act, through coalition forces and the media, when Kobane, a small town run by the YPG, was occupied. Of course the people of Kobane had to be protected, and Turkey assumed that responsibility alone. In addition, we can never approve of attacks by coalition forces anywhere. What we are criticizing are the West's areas of sensitivity.

s.160

The criticisms of Turkey during the occupation of Kobane were totally dishonest. Turkey was the only country to exhibit any sensitivity after the occupation and welcomed more than 200,000 of our Kurdish brothers in a single day. The great majority of our brothers are still under the protection of the Turkish government in specially erected camps.

s.163

The only reason why such an unexpectedly large part of the West declared things like "World Kobane Day" while the Middle East was drowning in blood was that the town stood inside the borders of the Great Kurdistan of which the West dreams.

s.167

According to the hadiths, the people from the East who bear black banners will have long hair and beards and will commit acts of violence in Syria and Iraq. The bearers of the black banners will eventually become followers of Hazrat Mahdi (pbuh).

s.168

Militants from the YPG, the armed wing of the PYD.

s.169

PYD joint leaders Salih Müslim and Asya Abdullah with posters of Öcalan.

s.170

Those who seek to portray the PYD/YPG as independent of the PKK are either ignorant or else overlooking the true facts. YPG meetings are held to the accompaniment of posters of Öcalan, while YPG militants carry pictures of Öcalan in their pockets and in their homes and read books by Öcalan.

s.172

PKK and YPG militants posing side by side on a tank.

s.175

The PKK and the PYD represent the same armed terror organization.

s.176

YPG militants in Rojava, the Kurdish area of Syria engage in inhuman treatment of their own people, as documented by Human Rights Watch reports.

s.177

The Kurdish people of Syria fled to Turkey to escape persecution by the PYD long before Assad's attacks.

s.179

According to a Human Rights Watch report, children in Rojava are given guns and used as militants. Since this policy of forced enrolment of children as soldiers is still continuing, our Kurdish brothers in the region are constantly fleeing to Turkey to escape repression by the PYD.

The child militant on the left is wearing a YPJ armband, representing the YPG Women's Defense Units.

s.180

Some Western journalists not believing the speculations from abroad and closely observing the YPG persecution in Kobane admitted that Turkey was justified for deploying Turkish tanks to the border during the occupation.

s.182

Turkey took care not only of all asylum-seekers that sought shelter from it with honor, but also the Kurdish people who came to Turkey after Kobane invasion with the same love and honor. Kurds who crossed our borders hugged Turkish soldiers with great joy and enjoyed arriving to secure lands. Syrian Kurds should know that we will always look out for them.

s.184

One of the world's largest refugee camps was established within a very short time in Suruç county for our Kurdish brothers and sisters who fled from Kobane and took shelter in our country. All kinds of comfort facilities for our brothers and sisters have been considered.

s.187

Pressures on Turkey have now escalated to be plainly observed both domestically and abroad. But it is impossible for us to hand this beautiful country and our Kurdish brothers and sisters - over to communist terror. Planners of this dirty plan should give up this passion.

s.188

The homeland is one of the most sensitive issues for the Turkish nation. The ones hesitating on this issue should take a look at the Turkish history. Therefore, there will be no such a solution for Turkey that would compromise its land and identity. The expectation of certain Western deep-state powers in this direction is in vain.

s.192

The PKK targeted mainly our Kurdish brothers and sisters throughout its history and committed massacres without hesitating to kill women, children and babies. The fact that the PKK continues terrorism where it left off the moment it finds an opportunity indicates that the PKK would never give up terrorism. The ones trying to portray the treacherous terrorist organization as if it were innocent are not aware that they serve the aims of the terrible terror targeting oppressed people.

s.194

Amnesty cannot be an issue for Öcalan and the murderers of the PKK. Once the idea that "Murderers are forgiven when they kill many people" is instilled into people's mind, it is evident that the terrorism would be easily grounded.

s.196

No one should come up with an idea such as suggesting the release of PKK leader Öcalan and the PKK murderers and impose it on the Turkish Nation. We advise the Western deep-states and their supporters in Turkey to abandon such a dangerous idea.

s.197

The Turkish nation cannot live without honor and dignity. Therefore, people are prepared to strive and even risk their lives for the sake of Allah to keep their honor. The ones who attempt to break the country into pieces might have to see how the Turkish army, the police, Special Forces and the Turkish people respond.

s.201

French comedian Djamel Debbouze, who was seen with Abdullah Öcalan posters in his hand at the Communist Party's traditional Fete de l'Humanite (Humanity Day) event that is held

annually apologized to the Turkish associations. Through perception operations, introducing terrorism and terrorists as if they were heroes is today's one of the biggest problems.

s.202

By displaying a picture of a PKK member holding a baby bear, *The Washington Post* tried to exculpate the murderers who martyred 40,000 Turkish soldiers. Interestingly enough, such propaganda efforts intensified when plans for Turkey's Balkanization came out.

s.203

The death of Serap Eser, a dear youngster of ours who was burned to death by the PKK murderers in a municipality bus, is just one of the malicious terrorist attacks conducted in cities. Some Western media tries to portray the PKK as a "peace dove", however, it always has sought an opportunity to carry out terrorist attacks and never abandoned its terrorist mindset. While the Western media is mounting a terrorist propaganda through a picture of a baby bear, the PKK still lays cruel ambushes within the Turkish territory.

s.204

Worldwide known newspapers and magazines such as *Time*, *Elle*, *Der Spiegel*, *BBC*, *Newsweek*, and *Marie Claire* portray the PKK, which point gun on Turkish police, soldier and even Kurdish people, as the hope of the Middle East. If the PKK conducted such terrorist attacks in Europe, the headlines of these media agencies would definitely be different.

s.205

Why did Elle Magazine kiss the female Kurdish guerilla?

s.221

In the Southeast of Turkey, almost no political party can hold a public demonstration with their own party flags. Due to the influence of the fear empire that the PKK found, the Southeastern people cannot attend the demonstrations with Turkish flags; our own flag is almost prohibited by the PKK, which has exerted dominance over the region.

s.222

The communist groups also benefited from the democratic protests of environmentalist youth groups during the Taksim Gezi Park protests in 2013. The local elections on March 30th, 2014 seemed like a vote of confidence after the protests. But the most serious consequence of this election was that the entire Southeastern part of Turkey was lost to the BDP, the PKK backed party.

s.223

Goes to Taksim commune

s.224

The PKK's insidious activities that aim to lay hold of the cities continued with the efforts to legalize the PKK. During the ceasefire, the erecting of a statue of Mahsum Korkmaz (the first commander of the PKK) and putting up posters of PKK terrorists on municipality buses indicated the severe magnitude of the PKK threat.

s.225

Following the handing over the Southeastern provinces to the BDP in 2014 local elections, the 2015 general elections (shown below) yielded worse results. The HDP declared its sovereignty over a large area reaching up to the Northeastern Anatolia.

s.227

It was not a surprise that in the wake of undemocratic elections held under the shadow of guns, conflicts began and some mayors declared "autonomy" or "self-government". From the beginning, the goal was to conquer the fort from within.

Karayılan asked

The PKK declared autonomy in Cizre.

Gültan Kışanak: "We want our share in Diyarbakır's oil revenues."

s.229

The KCK is a structure recognizing Öcalan as the only leader. All of the public statements made by the KCK Executive Council are carried out in front of Öcalan posters.

s.231

YDG-H Public order

KCK Public order

s.237

Communist dictators are often idolized to facilitate the obedience of the masses. The leaders are depicted as shining suns or as giant statues. Masses leaning in front of the statue of Kim Il Sung indicate the effectiveness of such propaganda today (lower right).

s.239

Just like other communist dictators, Öcalan attempts to show himself as god (God is beyond that). He attempts to influence the masses in this way.

s.240

Salute to Apo. KCK

s.241

The portrayal of Öcalan as a god or a prophet gained acceptance among some PKK terrorists (God is beyond that). Such a system idolized the leader as a god also facilitated obedience to the leader. The ones questioning the system have no right to live anyway.

s.243

FAKE

Marx developed the idea of communism after being inspired by the fake theory of evolution and claimed that history developed through dialectics, assuming a dialectic development exists among the living beings. However, neither living beings nor history developed through dialectic. Evolution is a complete fallacy.

s.244

Neo-liberal capitalism is certainly a materialistic system that brings with it disaster. However, its only solution is the Islamic morality based on the Qur'an, not communism with a more violent ideology.

s.246

In a communal society, which is a prerequisite for the communist system, all the members of society other than the leaders are considered as "sheep to herd".

s.249

There is no concept of family in the communal life. Such a system that abandons the notion of religion, morality, state and family is the main source of the violence and degeneration.

s.250

The KCK aims to seize the Southeastern Turkey through insidious methods and to establish an empire of fear with a communist, Marxist-Leninist philosophy. It realized most of its goals during the ceasefire period called the Solution Process.

s.252

Revenge YDG-H

s.253

Due to its dominance over the region, the PKK is sustaining its terrorism in our streets. Below: The streets of Cizre set on fire by the PKK.

s.255

Due to their dominance over the region, masked militants of the YDG-H can freely move around Turkish streets with their weapons.

s.257

The PKK has always abused Kurdish nationalism and tried to deceive some Kurdish people into supporting them this way. However, the Kurdish nation represents chivalry whereas the PKK represents treachery.

Long live democratic autonomous Kurdistan.

s.258

Freedom to Apo

s.259

YDG-H militants blocking the roads in Turkish cities. This recklessness gained strength during the so-called ceasefire, and now the PKK has now come to the point of laying treacherous traps within the cities.

s.261

The PKK militants are on the streets now. Southeastern people have been living under the pressure of the PKK terrorists for a long time.

s.263

YDG-H militants admitted that they became better organized and armed in the ceasefire period during so-called Solution Process.

s.265

The PKK terrorists walking on the streets with their rocket launchers became more determined to establish an empire of fear and to show that they seized streets of Turkey.

s.269

The PKK has never given up - and will never give up - its guns unless its ideology collapses. In history, communist dictators have always acquired their dominance by force. The only reason the PKK was able to come to the urban areas and find European interlocutors was its weapons.

s.275

The PKK became stronger and better armed following every ceasefire period. For the PKK, the rhetoric of laying down arms means replacing the old weapons with new ones. It is impossible for communist terrorism, which is based on violence, to lay down arms whatsoever.

s.277

Unless a scientific study is conducted on the Marxist-Leninist ideology of a terrorist organization, expecting that terrorist organization to lay down its arms is preposterous.

s.279

HERE IS THE BLOODY FACE OF THE PKK INTERNAL EXECUTIONS IN THE PKK

INSTANCES OF PKK'S INTERNAL EXECUTIONS

Shocking confession from a PKK terrorist, he disclosed the leader staff who were executed by the PKK.

The internal executions of the PKK were revealed.

PKK's confession to curdle the blood.

HERE ARE THE EXECUTIONS OF THE PKK MEMBERS

They open their own graves

PKK MASSACRE: KILLED 150 OF ITS MILITANTS WHO WERE ABOUT TO FLEE

HERE IS THE GRUESOME LIST OF PKK'S EXECUTIONS

PKK'S HORRENDOUS EXECUTIONS

s.281

Mehmet Şener from founding leaders cadre and his fiancée Sakine Cansız were executed by order of the PKK leaders.

SHE WAS ONE OF THE FOUNDERS OF THE PKK!

SHE COLLIDED WITH ÖCALAN

s.283

THE PKK TOOK ON THAT EXECUTION RIGHT IN THE MIDDLE OF THE STREET!

Abdullah Budak was executed on November 10th, 2014 in the middle of the street in Cizre by the PKK.

s.289

Arm yourselves against them with all the firepower and cavalry you can muster, to terrify the enemies of God and your enemies, and others besides them whom you do not know... (Quran, 8:60)

s.293

Our Special Operations Units should come into prominence especially in the Southeastern region of Turkey. The deterrent power of the state should be made evident with the help of these units. Opening more schools for training Special Operations Units is crucial.

s.294

Special Operations Units should be stationed at all times in the region, and the construction of Kalekol (high security outposts) should continue. Both the number and quality of the Kalekols should be increased; in addition to security, those outposts should be converted into living areas contributing to people in the region.

s.297

It is impossible for us to approve of practices like violence, attacks and executions in Iran. However, it is important to take Iran into consideration in terms of deterrence and show of force. If an alliance is formed with Iran to struggle against the PKK it is clear that the PKK will lose the majority of its power and demoralize. This alliance should be formed within a short period of time.

IRAN'S REVOLUTIONARY GUARDS ARE WATCHFUL AGAINST THE PKK

Iran's Revolutionary Guards Collided with PJAK/KODAR

s.299

The village guard system has been one of the most effective systems that dealt the hardest blow on the PKK. Therefore, at times of ceasefire the primary request of the PKK has always been to disband this unit. That is why the village guard system should definitely be strengthened with more protection and its conditions should be improved.

s.300

The Chairman of the Fraternal Association for Preserving Rights of Temporary Village Guards says: "While we were on duty, the PKK was looking for a place to hide. There was no such thing as the PKK."

s.303

A spectacular view from Şanlıurfa.

s.304

Recent steps taken in regard to the Kurdish language, especially the Kurdish translation of the Qur'an printed by the Directorate of Religious Affairs are very important and gratifying improvements.

s.311

The Diyarbakır Ramparts and Hevsel Gardens cultural landscape are on the world heritage list of UNESCO. No one will be able to prevent us from living with our Kurdish brothers in these beautiful lands.

s.313

Despite all the pressure of the PKK the main reason why it was not able to establish a sovereign territory in the Southeast region of our country in so many years is the devoutness of our Kurdish people. Bringing up a faithful generation will be one of the most intense strikes over the PKK.

s.315

Beautiful scenery from the Great Mosque in Diyarbakır.

Top left: An amazingly beautiful Kurdish child.

s.317

An education system emphasizing the concepts of superiority of women, democracy, justice, arts, science, and peace based on the verses of the Qur'an is needed in the Southeast of Turkey. It is important to introduce the true Islam as described in the Qur'an in upbringing the new Kurdish youth.

s.319

Especially when it comes to the struggle against the PKK, it is important to form an alliance with Iraqi Kurdish leader Masoud Barzani.

s.320

Barzani called on to the Kurdish Parliament in Iraq to prevent the impact of the PKK leaders such as Duran Kalkan in Northern Iraq and the presence of the PKK in the region.

s.321

The PKK has been a threat against the Kurdish government in Iraq for years. Instituting an alliance with Turkey is essential for the welfare of that region, and for the children of Iraqi Kurds to prosper in peace.

s.323

Left: Iran Revolutionary Guards

Right: Heroic Turkish Maroon Berets (Special Forces)

In order to create an effective deterrence against the PKK, a joint military action with both Iraqi Kurdish Autonomous Administration and Iran would yield very positive results.

s.325

Western countries should be informed comprehensively about the PKK. The treachery of the PKK should be disclosed in detail. The West should be informed on how a supposed communist state set about from Turkey would be detrimental.

s.327

The YPG is a branch of the PKK. While the PKK is listed amongst the terrorist organizations, West's not including the YPG to that list and thereby supporting it unreservedly will only benefit the PKK. The West is unaware of the trouble it is a part of and must definitely be informed of this.

s.328

The ideology of the PKK is the same as Mao who shed blood in China, Stalin who terrorized Russia, and Pol Pot who carried out mass massacres in Cambodia. The PKK is attempting to build the same terrible system first in the Middle East and then all over the world.

s.333

The ideology of the PKK is the same as Mao who shed blood in China, Stalin who terrorized Russia, and Pol Pot who carried out mass massacres in Cambodia. The PKK is attempting to build the same terrible system first in the Middle East and then all over the world.

s.336

1988 The Halabja Massacre

s.337

The Kurdish people have suffered gravely in the region for years. While Saddam was slaughtering the innocent Kurdish people with chemical weapons in Halabja, al-Assad in Syria was oppressing the Kurds that were not given even a birth certificate through brutal coercion.

s.339

From the past to the present, Turkey has embraced our Kurdish brothers, who were forced to flee from their countries, with great honor and love.

Left: A Kurdish child who fled from the tyranny of Saddam in 1991 and took refuge in Cukurca refugee camp in Turkey.

Right: Today, a Kurdish child who fled from Syria and took refuge in Turkey.

s.341

Innocent Kurdish mothers, fathers, and outstandingly beautiful Kurdish children never deserved any of the oppression or tyranny they have faced throughout history. We are aware of the difficulties that our brothers are living through in this period. But now time has come for recovery. Rather than bearing the anger of the past, our Kurdish brothers should collaborate with the ones that ask for brotherliness.

s.343

It should be known that we have no intention to surrender our Kurdish youth and Kurdish citizens to communism. The PKK never and ever represents the Kurds. It is definitely a requirement to differentiate the Kurdish people from the PKK.

s.344

The only thing the PKK represents is treachery. On the contrary, our Kurdish brothers represent honor, integrity, and superior morality. To name the perfidious PKK terrorists as Kurds would only be defamation against being a Kurd.

s.347

Innocent Kurdish people, who are blended with Islamic moral values, deserve the most perfected conduct at all circumstances.

s.349

A beautiful view from the city of Şanlıurfa.

s.353

It is crucial to dignify the people of the Southeast with their due worth. A policy providing all the means to expedite their living in peace and welfare in the region should be implemented firmly.

s.354

VAN

s.355

ŞANLIURFA

AĞRI

s.356

This mass grave showing the persecution implemented by the Saddam regime represents only a portion of the nightmare that our Kurdish brothers have passed through.

s.357

When the whole world turned their back to refugees, Turkey was the first country that opened its hearts and gates to our refugee brothers amongst whom there were Kurds. Turkish soldiers welcomed our Kurdish brothers with true compassion.

s.359

Racism is a mental illness beyond ignorance. All people in the world descended from the Prophet Adam (pbuh) and Islam has unquestionably condemned racism. For that reason our Kurdish brothers should not give ear to the policies of so-called "White Turks", who are only few in number in our country.

s.361

Now, it is time to leave behind the days of oppression, pressure and tears dominating over our Kurdish brothers. Removing the communist threat, we will live peacefully and brotherly in an environment with no cries.

Our brothers praying at the Great Mosque of Diyarbakır.

s.370

The true morality of the Qur'an presents a world with no discrimination on the grounds of religion, language, race or ethnic origins and where everyone is at peace and free. Hence, the principal resolution for the Middle East should be the dissemination of the morals of Islam as described in the Qur'an through education, and the abolishment of the false religious mindset which is based on superstitions.

s.388

Louise Pasteur

s.389

As accepted also by the latest evolutionist theorists, the origin of life is still a great stumbling block for the theory of evolution.

s.391

One of the facts nullifying the theory of evolution is the astonishingly complex structure of life. The DNA molecule located in the nucleus of cells of living beings is an example of this. The DNA is a sort of databank formed of the arrangement of four different molecules in different sequences. This databank contains the codes of all the physical traits of that living being. When the human DNA is put into writing, it is calculated that this would result in an encyclopedia made up of 900 volumes. Unquestionably, such extraordinary information definitively refutes the concept of coincidence.

s.393

Lamarck believed that giraffes evolved from such animals as antelopes. In his view, the necks of these grass-eating animals gradually grew longer, and they eventually turned into giraffes. The laws of inheritance discovered by Mendel in 1865 proved that it was impossible for properties acquired during life to be handed on to subsequent generations. Lamarck's giraffe fairy tale was thus consigned to the wastebin of history.

s.394

Since the beginning of the twentieth century, evolutionary biologists have sought examples of beneficial mutations by creating mutant flies. But these efforts have always resulted in sick and deformed creatures. The top picture shows the head of a normal fruit fly, and the picture on the left shows the head of a fruit fly with legs coming out of it, the result of mutation.

leg

antenne

eye

mouth

s.397

This fossil crocodile from the Cretaceous period is 65 million years old. It is identical to crocodiles living today.

This mone unearthed in Italy is 54 to 37 million years old.

This 50-million-year-old fossil plane-tree leaf was unearthed in the USA. Plane-tree leaves have remained unchanged for 50 million years, and have never evolved.

s.401

Evolutionists generally interpret fossils in the light of their ideological expectations, for which reason the conclusions they arrive at are for the most part unreliable.

s.402

FALSE

s.403

Evolutionist newspapers and magazines often print pictures of primitive man. The only available source for these pictures is the imagination of the artist. Evolutionary theory has been so dented by scientific data that today we see less and less of it in the serious press.

s.407

Compared to cameras and sound recording machines, the eye and ear are much more complex, much more successful and possess far superior designs to these products of high technology.

s.408

We live our whole life in our brains. People we see, flowers we smell, music we hear, fruit we taste, the moisture we feel with our hands-all these are impressions that become "reality" in the brain. But no colors, voices or pictures exist there. We live in an environment of electrical impulses. This is no theory, but the scientific explanation of how we perceive the outside world.

s.412

In the same way that the beliefs of people who worshipped crocodiles now seem odd and unbelievable, so the beliefs of Darwinists are just as incredible. Darwinists regard chance and lifeless, unconscious atoms as a creative force, and are as devoted to that belief as if to a religion.

BACK COVER

The PKK, which has been trying for almost 40 years to create a communist-anarchist state by breaking Turkey apart, has been trying to achieve this aim most recently through various illegal state apparatus (such as the KCK) it has set up within the country. At this stage, the Turkish State should take strong, efficient, and realistic precautions more than ever and should look out for our Kurdish brothers seriously.

In this time, when the Middle East is fighting against so many disturbances, the fact that the USA is openly arming the PKK's branch in Syria (PYD) is a major problem. The American deep state dreams of a Great Kurdistan in the Middle East, largely because of some Evangelicals' incorrect expectations about the End Times, and therefore sees no harm in supporting the PKK and its branches. It fails to analyze the scourge of the PKK properly and comprehend that this communist-anarchist organization poses a serious threat to itself as well.

This book explains how the PKK puts its malicious designs on Turkey into effect, which methods it uses to get the inside track, and what precautions Turkey must take against it. It also offers solutions and describes the great mistake that the USA is making by supporting the PKK.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR: Adnan Oktar, who writes under the pen-name Harun Yahya, was born in Ankara in 1956. Since the 1980s, the author has published many books on faith-related, scientific and political issues. He is well-known as the author of important works disclosing the imposture of evolutionists, their invalid claims, and the dark liaisons between Darwinism and such bloody ideologies as fascism and communism.

All of the author's works share one single goal: To convey the Qur'an's message, encourage readers to consider basic faith-related issues such as God's existence and unity and the Hereafter; and to expose irreligious systems' feeble foundations and perverted ideologies. His more than 300 works, translated into 73 different languages, enjoy a wide readership across the world.

By the will of God, the books of Harun Yahya will be a means through which people in the twenty-first century will attain the peace, justice, and happiness promised in the Qur'an.